



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

TX 455 .P541
Phelps, Ruth Shepard,
Italian grammar /

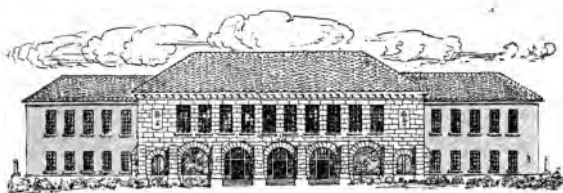
Stanford University Libraries



3 6105 04926 3259

ITALIAN GRAMMAR

PHILIPS



SCHOOL OF EDUCATION
LIBRARY

TEXTBOOK COLLECTION

GIFT OF

Dr. Camillo Von Klenze



STANFORD UNIVERSITY
LIBRARIES

1891
May 10

17

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

BY

RUTH SHEPARD PHELPS

PROFESSOR OF ROMANCE LANGUAGES IN THE
UNIVERSITY OF MINNESOTA

GINN AND COMPANY

BOSTON • NEW YORK • CHICAGO • LONDON
ATLANTA • DALLAS • COLUMBUS • SAN FRANCISCO

P_i

657662

**COPYRIGHT, 1917, BY
RUTH SHEPARD PHELPS**

ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

PRINTED IN THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

227.11

The Athenaeum Press

**GINN AND COMPANY • PRO-
PRIETORS • BOSTON • U.S.A.**

.

PREFACE

What is new in this work is chiefly the division and arrangement of topics, though the Introduction assembles material upon pronunciation and versification not hitherto brought together in English, and there is some novelty in subject matter in the exercises for translation. The plan of the book has the merit of having grown directly out of the needs of the classroom. The arrangement is such, it is hoped, as will make the book equally serviceable for the classroom and for private study, and will give it certain of the advantages of both "first book" and reference grammar.

The beginning has been deliberately made very easy. Even the definite article, with which most Italian grammars naturally begin, has been deferred in favor of the indefinite, which, as it lacks a plural, has fewer forms itself and does not immediately require the plural of nouns. This leaves the attention free to center upon the single new principle of the "*s* impure." The definite article with its more complicated forms is not introduced until the fourth lesson, and the main body of rules governing its syntax not until the twenty-second. The plural of nouns is treated in its simpler aspects in the third lesson, and extensively in the thirtieth.

This method of breaking up the more difficult subjects and presenting them at first piecemeal, reserving more thorough-going treatment for a later chapter, has been followed throughout. The subjunctive, for example, is introduced one rule at a time, each illustrated by a sentence or two in all subsequent exercises, so that its use in a few standard cases at least will become automatic, and the student will not fall into the way of regarding it as an unusual, unnatural mood, reserved for special occasions. The subject is

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

treated as a whole in Lesson XXVIII. Many of the idiomatic uses of *da*, likewise, are introduced early, although the general treatment of prepositions, including a great number of idioms constructed by means of them, is one of the last in the book. The verbs *essere* and *avere*, except for the indispensable present indicative, are postponed until the regular verbs have been completely learned. The subject of conjunctive pronouns, sometimes presented in a single lesson, is here divided among four, not consecutive, while sentences in the intervening and subsequent exercises continue practice upon them.

In consequence of this method of introducing a working knowledge of many difficult principles early, while leaving their more complicated treatment for later chapters, the book can be divided rather easily, if desired, into first and second year work. Twenty-seven lessons, let us say, would introduce more or less fully all the more important principles, and cover completely the subject of conjunctive pronouns. These lessons, with the irregular verbs of the remaining lessons, might constitute the first year's work, leaving twelve lessons of more complicated questions of syntax for the second year.

It has not always seemed desirable to be entirely consistent in this breaking up of the more difficult subjects; logical arrangement has sometimes seemed to require, as in the case of the person in address, a complete treatment at first. Where this has been the case, the paragraphs dealing with the more subtle points are marked with a star, and may be assigned merely to be read over, or omitted altogether, as the exercises do not illustrate them. In any case the index makes scattered material readily available.

As to the exercises, the older custom has been observed of making them accompany the lessons they illustrate, in the belief that this arrangement keeps the student better in mind of all the work he has done and facilitates review. In designing the work which illustrates the new principles as they are introduced, the desirability of continuing practice on principles already acquired has been kept

PREFACE

steadily in mind. If the instructor prefers fewer sentences for translation, the assignment may be limited to those which illustrate the current lesson. Where the vocabulary seems long, there will usually be found a large proportion of those words whose meaning can be guessed at a glance, and far more of them occur in the paragraphs of Italian reading matter than in the sentences for translation. The paragraphs of Italian on which the exercises for translation are based are in small part original, in large part borrowed or adapted from Italian school readers designed for the lower grades. So they furnish practice from the first in reading connected prose, offer a good practical vocabulary, and deal attractively with Italian home and school life, and the history of modern Italy. Thanks are due to Messrs. Bemporad e Figlio for permission to use selections from the readers *Il mondo nuovo* by Renato Fucini and two *Libri di lettura* by Neretti and Giròni, and to the Società Laziale Editrice of Rome for permission to make similar use of paragraphs from *La terza Italia* in Lessons XXVIII and XXIX. These last, it may to-day be necessary to add, were not selected with any idea of influencing American sentiment, but to show what topics were agitating the Italian mind in the last days before the Great War broke out.

The series of dialogues in the latter part of the book offers a little practice in familiar idiom; they are especially intended for travelers, as they include a good many words useful in the shops and hotels, on the railway, and so on. They are composed in a Tuscan too colloquial to form the basis of exercises, and may be entirely omitted at the pleasure of the instructor.

The third person as the person of address in ordinary intercourse, being the only one for which most travelers have occasion, is introduced very early, before the habit of the true second person is acquired. Accordingly, in the exercises it is the latter which is made to seem the unusual form.

Questions of pronunciation, accent, orthography, and the like are treated in the Introduction, along with an outline of the Italian

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

system of versification and some hints as to the reading of Italian poetry. As the pronunciation cannot be perfectly represented for English readers by any system of equivalent spellings, the instructor will find it necessary to supplement *viva voce* what is said here.

Of the many works that have been consulted in the preparation of this book, those which have been most closely followed are R. Fornaciari's *Grammatica italiana dell' uso moderno*, Parts I and II, and, especially for the Introduction, *Ortoepia e ortografia italiana moderna*, by G. Malagòli. The dictionaries of Edgren and Petrocchi have been constantly consulted; suggestions as to material and arrangement have been gained from the Italian work of Morandi and Cappuccini and from my American predecessors in this field, and for several hints as to Tuscan idiom I am indebted to the grammars of N. Orlandi and Alina Vannini. And I desire to thank Professor A. A. Livingston of Columbia University for kindly undertaking the laborious task of reading this book in proof, and for his very valuable suggestions on many points.

The present impression of this textbook, the eighth, contains, like most of its predecessors, numerous small improvements which constant use of the book in many institutions has shown were desirable.

RUTH SHEPARD PHELPS

UNIVERSITY OF MINNESOTA

CONTENTS

	PAGE
INTRODUCTION	
Alphabet	I
Pronunciation	2
Syllabification	15
Tonic Accent	15
Graphic Accents	19
Elision	20
Apocopation	22
Variant Forms of Words	24
Capitalization	25
Archaic and Poetic Forms	26
Versification	28
LESSONS	
I. Indefinite Article	33
II. Present of <i>avere</i> and <i>essere</i> . Pronouns in Address	36
III. Plural of Nouns. Future Indicative	39
IV. Definite Article. Past Absolute Indicative	41
V. Contraction of Article. Past Future	45
VI. Gender of Nouns	48
VII. Adjectives and Adverbs	51
VIII. Regular Verbs	58
IX. Conjunctive Pronouns	63
X. <i>Essere</i> . The Passive Voice	67
XI. Conjunctives Continued. Auxiliaries with Intransitive Verbs	71
XII. Reflexive Verbs	76
XIII. Possessives	81
XIV. Changes of Letters in Regular Verbs. Relative Pronouns .	86
XV. The Comparative	90
XVI. The Verb <i>avere</i>	95

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

LESSONS	PAGE
XVII. Two Conjunctive Objects. Conjunctive Adverbs . . .	100
XVIII. Irregular Verbs	103
XIX. <i>Dare, sapere, volere</i>	107
XX. Disjunctives. <i>Venire</i>	111
XXI. Tenses. Verb and Subject	117
XXII. Definite Article. <i>Andare</i> . L'Arrivo	126
XXIII. Cardinal Numerals. <i>Morire</i>	135
XXIV. Ordinal Numerals, Collectives, etc. <i>Parere</i>	142
XXV. Indefinite Article. <i>Fare</i> . Dialogue: L'Albergo . .	149
XXVI. Impersonal Verbs. <i>Stare</i>	155
XXVII. Conjunctive with Dependent Infinitive. <i>Potere</i> . Dialogue: Dalla sarta	160
XXVIII. The Subjunctive. <i>Dolere</i>	164
XXIX. The Infinitive. <i>Dire</i>	170
XXX. Number of Nouns. <i>Piacere</i>	175
XXXI. Modal Auxiliaries. <i>Dovere</i> . Dialogue: Dal sarto .	184
XXXII. Relative, Demonstrative, and Interrogative Pronouns. <i>Udire</i>	190
XXXIII. Participles. <i>Porre</i> . Dialogue: Dal calzolaio . .	196
XXXIV. Gender of Nouns. <i>Uscire</i>	203
XXXV. Indefinites. <i>Scegliere</i> . L'Automobile	209
XXXVI. Adverbs. <i>Valere</i>	220
XXXVII. Prepositions. Dialogue: Dalla modista	232
XXXVIII. Augmentatives and Diminutives. Dialogue: Si fanno le compre	246
XXXIX. Conjunctions and Interjections	251
 ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS	 261
ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY	275
ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY	301
INDEX	323

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

INTRODUCTION

I. THE ALPHABET

1. The Italian alphabet is composed of twenty-one letters. Those whose names end in **-a** are of feminine, those in **-e** of common, and the others of masculine gender; but they all may be treated as feminine, to agree with **lettera** understood. They do not change for the plural. Their Italian names are —

LETTERS	ITALIAN NAMES	PRONUNCIATION	LETTERS	ITALIAN NAMES	PRONUNCIATION
a	a	(ah)	n	enne	(ennay)
b	bi	(bee)	o	o	(toll)
c	ci	(cheat)	p	pi	(pea)
d	di	(Dee)	q	cu	(coo)
e	e	(ale)	r	erre	(erray)
f	effe	(effay)	s	esse	(essay)
g	gi	(genius)	t	ti	(tea)
h	acca	(ahkkah)	u	u	(ooze)
i	i	(machine)	v	vu	(voodoo)
l	elle	(ellay)	z	zeta	(dzayta)
m	emme	(emmay)			

a. The letter **j** (*i lungo*) exists, but only as a diacritical mark used by some writers to indicate the use of **i** as semivowel (cf. **4**): **giojelli**, **operaj**; or instead of **ii**: **desiderj**; or for the spelling of foreign words.

b. The following consonants also exist in Italian, for the spelling of foreign words: **k** (*cappa*), **w** (*doppio vu*), **y** (*ipsilon* or *i greco*), and **x** (*icse* or *ics*).

II. PRONUNCIATION OF THE LETTERS

2. The Vowel Sounds. There are seven vowel sounds in Italian, as follows :

a = ah	fa
e (close) = <i>ale</i>	pepe
e (open) = <i>men</i>	bella
i = <i>machine</i>	Mimi
o (close) = <i>low</i>	solò
o (open) = <i>ought</i>	so
u = <i>moon</i>	luna

a. As the rules given (cf. 3) for determining the close and open **e** and **o**, besides being difficult to remember, do not cover all cases, these vowels, when accented, will be marked in this book (as indicated above) when appearing in the text for the first time, in the special vocabularies, and in the complete vocabulary at the end of the volume.

b. People accustomed to speak English incline to mispronounce **a**, **i**, and **u** in certain combinations, slackening and dulling their quality by analogy with English; this tendency is apparent in **a** when final, as in **Amērica**, and in **i** and **u** when followed by two or more consonants, or by **l** or **r** when accented in the antepenult. Thus **i** in **virtù** 'virtue,' **ninfa** 'nymph,' **mirra** 'myrrh,' **principe** 'prince,' is slackened to the *i* of 'virile'; **u** in **singulto** 'sob,' **Būlgaro** 'Bulgarian,' **giunto** 'arrived,' to the *u* of 'pull.' This tendency should be avoided, and the sound of these vowels kept identical in all combinations.

3. Close and Open E and O. A few rules apply alike to both, but there are numerous special rules for each.

a. Both are Close when followed by **gn**, **lm**, **mm**, **nn** (*except donna* 'woman,' *monna* 'Lady,' *nonno* 'grandfather').
EXAMPLES : **pegno** 'pledge,' **sogno** 'dream,' **elmo** 'helmet,' **olmo** 'elm,' **vendemmia** 'vintage,' **sommo** 'supreme,' **venni** 'I came.'

b. Both are Open —

1. When followed by **ns**, **q**, **str**, or (nearly always) a single consonant + two vowels. EXAMPLES: **pēns**o 'I think,' **cōns**ole 'consul,' **ēqu**o 'equal,' **nōst**ro 'our,' **finēst**ra 'window,' **Venēz**ia 'Venice,' **commēd**ia 'comedy,' **purgatōr**io 'purgatory,' **collēg**io 'college.'

2. When preceded by a consonant + **l**: **glōb**o 'globe,' **splēnd**ido 'splendid.'

3. *Contrary to rules*, in so-called 'learned' words, not in common use by the people at large: **precōc**e 'precocious,' **testimōn**e 'witness,' **alfabēt**o 'alphabet,' **dittōng**o 'diphthong,' **napoleōn**ico 'Napoleonic,' **recondit**o 'recondite,' **Califōr**nia.

c. E is Close (*Lat.* **ī**, **ē**, *oe* > *It.* **e**) —

1. In unaccented syllables: **Pētr**ucchio; **cōm**e 'like.'

2. In monosyllables and oxytones ending in **e**: **merc**e 'thanks to,' **rē** 'King.' EXCEPTIONS: **chē**! 'what!' and other interjections; **è** 'is,' **rē** (musical note), **diē** 'he gave,' **piē** 'foot,' and foreign nouns like **caffē** 'coffee,' **Noē** 'Noah.'

3. In the endings **-ēfice**, **-ēggio**, **-ēmbro**, **-esco -a**, **-ese**, **-ēsimo** (in nouns), **-essa**, **-eto** (in collectives), **-etto -a** (cf. *d*, 6), **-ēvole**, **-mente**, and **-mento**. EXAMPLES: **orēf**ice 'goldsmith,' **passēgg**io 'walk,' **mēmb**ro 'member,' **Francesco** 'Francis,' **mēs**e 'month,' **battēs**imo 'baptism,' **contēs**sa 'countess,' **olivēto** 'olive-grove,' **allegrēt**to 'cheerful,' **onorēv**ole 'honorable,' **facilment**e 'easily,' **appartament**o 'apartment.'

4. Before **cc**, **ce**, **pp**, **zz** (*except* **ēcco** 'here is,' **specch**io 'mirror,' **vecch**io 'old,' **Giusepp**e 'Joseph,' **sēpp**e 'he knew,' **mēzz**o 'half,' **pēzz**o 'piece,' **prezz**o 'price,' and a few others). EXAMPLES: **zēcc**a 'mint,' **orēcc**io 'ear,' **invēc**e 'instead,' **cēpp**i 'fetters,' **ricchēzz**a 'richness.'

5. In the pronouns **mē** 'me,' **nē** 'of it,' **tē** 'thee,' **gliē** 'to her'; **ēgli**, **ēi**, 'he'; **quēst**o 'this,' **quēll**o 'that'; **stēs**so, **medēs**imo, 'self.'

6. In the contracted prepositions **nello** 'in the,' **dello** 'of the,' etc.; in the conjunctions **e** 'and,' **che** 'that,' **finchè** 'as long as,' **mentre** 'while,' **perchè** 'why,' **se** 'if,' etc.; in the adverbs **dentro** 'within,' **meno** 'less,' **spesso** 'often'; in the numerals **tre** 'three,' **trēdici** 'thirteen,' **sēdici** 'sixteen,' **venti** 'twenty,' **trēnta** 'thirty.'

7. In verbs: whenever accented in the infinitive, past descriptive, future, past absolute, and past subjunctive; in the second plural of the present indicative and imperative; in the second singular and first and second plural of the past future, and in past absolutes and past participles in **-esi** and **-eso -a**, except **chiesi** 'I asked' and its compounds.

d. E is Open (*Lat. ē, ae > It. iē, e*) —

1. When preceded by **i**, or when **i** has been dropped from before it: **cieco** 'blind,' **sēte** (for **siēte**) 'you are.'

2. In the endings **-ello -a** (*except* **capello** 'hair' and **stella** 'star'), **-ema, -endo -a** (*except* **vendo** 'I sell,' **scendo** 'I descend'), **-ense, -ente -o -i -a, -lento, -enza, -ero** (in nouns of more than two syllables), **-ēssimo** (in numerals). EXAMPLES: **bello** 'beautiful,' **problema** 'problem,' **bēnda** 'band,' **estense** 'of Este,' **Benevento**, **vivente** 'living,' **sonnolento** 'somnolent,' **prudenza** 'prudence,' **impero** 'empire,' **ventēssimo** 'twentieth.'

3. When followed by a single vowel: **sēi** 'six,' **ebreo** 'Hebrew.'

4. In foreign nouns, when final and accented: **Moisē** 'Moses,' **tē** 'tea.'

5. In the adverbs **bene** 'well,' **certo** 'surely,' **mēglio** 'better,' **pēggio** 'worse,' **presso** 'near,' **sempre** 'always,' **verso** 'towards,' in the preposition **senza** 'without,' and in the numerals **terzo** 'third,' **sēsto** 'sixth,' **sētte** 'seven,' **sēttimo** 'seventh.'

6. In verbs: in past absolutes in **-etti** and past participles in **-ento** and **-etto**; in present participles in **-endo** and **-ente**; in the first and third singular and third plural of the past future; in **chiesi** and its compounds, and **ebbi** 'I had,' **ebbe** 'he had,' **ebbero**

'they had.' EXAMPLES: *credetti* 'I believed,' *attento* 'attentive,' *letto* 'read,' *potrei* 'I might,' *avrebbe* 'he would have,' *saprebbero* 'they would know.'

e. The following are a few of the words which, although spelled alike, differ in meaning according as the *e* is close or open :

<i>acchetta</i> hatchet	<i>acchetta</i> from <i>accettare</i> to accept
<i>dette</i> from <i>dire</i> to say	<i>dette</i> from <i>dare</i> to give
<i>legge</i> law	<i>legge</i> from <i>leggere</i> to read
<i>mele</i> apples	<i>mele</i> (<i>miele</i>) honey
<i>mente</i> memory	<i>mente</i> from <i>mentire</i> to lie
<i>pesca</i> from <i>pescare</i> to fish	<i>pesca</i> peach
<i>peste</i> footprints	<i>peste</i> pest
<i>sete</i> thirst	<i>sete</i> (<i>siete</i>) you are
<i>tema</i> from <i>temere</i> to fear	<i>tema</i> theme

f. *O* is Close (*Lat.* ŭ, *ō* > *It.* o) —

1. In the endings *-oce*, *-doio*, *-soio*, *-toio*, *-one* -o *-a*, *-ore* -a, *-oso* (in adjectives). EXAMPLES: *feroce* 'ferocious,' *corridoio* 'corridor,' *vassio* 'tray,' *scrittioio* 'writing-desk,' *portone* 'great gate,' *padrona* 'mistress,' *imperatore* 'emperor,' *stiratora* 'laundress,' *glorioso* 'glorious,' *suntuoso* 'sumptuous.'

2. Before *r* + *l*, *m*, *n*, *r*, *s*; before *m* or *n* + any consonant except *s*; and before *l* + *c*, *f*, *p*, *s*, or *t* (*except* in the inflections of *cogliere* 'to pluck,' *sciogliere* 'to loosen,' *togliere* 'to take away,' *volgere* 'to turn': *colto*, *sciolsi*, *tolse*, *volta*, etc.). EXAMPLES: *orlo* 'margin,' *forma* 'form,' *forno* 'oven,' *torre* 'tower,' *torso* 'torso,' *Orsola* 'Ursula,' *ombra* 'shadow,' *compra* 'buys,' *gondola* 'gondola,' *tronco* 'trunk,' *contro* 'against,' *monte* 'mountain,' *biondo* 'blonde,' *bronzo* 'bronze,' *oppongo* 'I oppose,' *solco* 'furrow,' *dolce* 'sweet,' *golfo* 'gulf,' *volpe* 'fox,' *colto* 'cultivated.'

3. In past absolutes and past participles in *-osi*, *-oso* (*except* *esplōso*, *esplōsi*), *-osto*, *-otto*. EXAMPLES: *nascosi* 'I hid,' *roso* 'gnawed,' *opposto* 'opposed,' *rotto* 'broken.'

4. In the pronouns *lò* 'him,' *loro* 'their,' *coloro*, *costoro*, 'they,' *ogni* 'every'; in the numerals *dōdici* 'twelve,' *quattōrdici* 'fourteen,'; in *molto* 'much'; in the prepositions and conjunctions *come* 'like,' *dopo* 'after,' *dove* 'where,' *oltre* 'beyond,' *sopra* 'over,' *sotto* 'under'; in the negative *non*; and in the past subjunctive of *essere* 'to be': *fossi* 'I might be' etc.

g. O is Open (*Lat.* *ō*, *au* > *It.* *uo*, *o*) —

1. After *u*, and in words from which a preceding *u* has been dropped. EXAMPLES: *fuoco* 'fire,' *nuovo* (for *nuovo*) 'new.' Cf. *f*, 1.

2. In monosyllables and oxytones ending in *o*, except *lò*. EXAMPLES: *ciò* 'that,' *andò* 'he went,' *farò* 'I shall do,' *Pò* the river, *dò* 'I give.'

3. When followed by a vowel (*except* in *noi*, *voi*, and the endings *-dōio*, *-sōio*, *-tōio*). EXAMPLES: *Savōia* 'Savoy,' *nōia* 'annoyance,' *erōe* 'hero,' *Balbōa*, *tuōi* 'thy.'

4. Before *b*, *d* (*except coda* 'tail,' *dōdici* 'twelve,' *rōdo* 'I gnaw'), *f*, *ns*, *-cchi-*, *-rchi-*. EXAMPLES: *rōba* 'things,' *gōbbo* 'hunchback,' *brōdo* 'broth,' *stōffa* 'goods,' *respōnso* 'response,' *ginōcchio* 'knee,' *rimōrchio* 'towing.'

5. When accented in the antepenult before a single *t* or *s*, or any double consonant except *m* or *r*. EXAMPLES: *esōtico* 'exotic,' *propōsito* 'resolution,' *zōccolo* 'wooden shoe,' *sōffoca* 'suffocates,' *viōttola* 'lane.'

6. In the endings *-ōccio*, *-ōlo*, *-ōntico*, *-ōto*, *-ōtto* (*except* past participles, cf. *f*, 3), *-ōzzo*. EXAMPLES: *carrōccio* 'cart,' *Tirōlo* 'Tyrol,' *anacrerōntico* 'Anacreontic,' *ignōto* 'unknown,' *aquilōtto* 'eaglet,' *bōzzo* 'sketch.'

7. In the adverbs *ōggi* 'to-day,' *pōco* 'little,' *talvōlta* 'sometimes,' *tōsto* 'soon,' *trōppo* 'too much'; the conjunctions *perō* 'however,' *perciō* 'on this account,' etc.; the negative *nò* 'no'; and the numerals *nōno* 'ninth,' *nōve* 'nine.'

8. In past absolutes in *-ōssi*, *-ōlsi*. EXAMPLES: *mōssi* 'I moved,' *sciōlse* 'he loosened.'

h. Some of the words which, although spelled alike, differ in meaning according as the *o* is close or open :

CLOSE	OPEN
<i>cogli</i> contracted <i>prep.</i> with the	<i>cogli</i> from <i>cogliere</i> to pluck
<i>collo</i> contracted <i>prep.</i> with the	<i>collo</i> neck
<i>fosse</i> from <i>essere</i> to be	<i>fosse</i> ditches
<i>rosa</i> from <i>rōdere</i> to gnaw	<i>rosa</i> rose
<i>torre</i> tower	<i>torre</i> (<i>togliere</i>) to take away
<i>tosco</i> Tuscan (<i>poetic</i>)	<i>tosco</i> poison
<i>vulgo</i> ignorant class	<i>vulgo</i> from <i>vulgere</i> to turn
<i>vulto</i> face	<i>vulto</i> from <i>vulgere</i> to turn

4. Semivowels and Diphthongs. Any two vowels pronounced as one syllable constitute a diphthong. The vowels *i* and *u* before another vowel are usually pronounced respectively *y* and *w*, and are then called semivowels. (See below, 4, *d*.)

Diphthongs are of two kinds: *a. Rising* diphthongs, in which a "weak" vowel (*i* or *u*) precedes a "strong" vowel (*e*, *o*, or *a*) and the strong is stressed. EXAMPLES: *lieto* 'joyous,' *fuoco* 'fire,' *guardi* 'look,' *uomo* 'man,' *ieri* 'yesterday,' *qui*.

b. Falling diphthongs, in which a strong vowel precedes a weak, and still receives the stress. EXAMPLES: *noi* 'we,' *poichè* 'since,' *Europa* 'Europe,' *Laura*.

1. When two weak vowels combine, the second usually takes the stress. EXAMPLES: *guida* 'guide,' *giù* 'down.'

c. Triphthongs. A strong vowel between two weak ones, or a weak between two strong, may form a triphthong, which is really two diphthongs in one, a rising and a falling. EXAMPLES: *mièi* 'my,' *suoi* 'his,' *studiai* 'I studied,' *bestiugla* 'small creature.'

1. Four or even five vowels may be contiguous, and pronounced together; but usually the first of these stands after *g* or *c* merely to give it a special sound (cf. 5, *a*), and so only three, or four, are heard. EXAMPLES: *gioiello* 'jewel,' *merciaio* 'dry-goods merchant,' *bagagliaio* 'baggage room,' *Acciaiuolo*.

d. In many words, often compound or derivative, *i* and *u* are not semivowels but are pronounced as a separate syllable. In such case the combination is not a diphthong. EXAMPLES: *spi-a* 'spy,' *spi-are* 'to spy,' *signori-a* 'lordship,' *oblì-o* 'oblivion,' *ri-è-sco* 'I succeed,' *ri-uscire* 'to succeed,' *pi-uolo* 'rung,' *tri-ò-nfo* 'triumph,' *vi-aggio* 'journey,' *sontu-oso* 'sumptuous,' *ambigu-o* 'ambiguous.'

5. Consonant Sounds. *a*. The following consonant sounds occur in Italian, all of them being pronounced more explosively than in English, except when standing alone between two vowels.

b, as in English.

c, *cc*, (hard) before *a*, *o*, *u*, = *k*: *caro* 'dear,' *con* 'with,' *cura* 'care.'

c, *cc*, (soft) before *i* or *e*, = *ch*: *Cina* 'China,' *centro* 'center.'

ch (used only before *i* or *e*), = *k*: *chi* 'who?' *che* 'which.'

ci before another vowel, = *ch*: *cièco* 'blind,' *ciuco* 'donkey,' *provincia* 'province.'

d, *t*, pronounced with tip of tongue farther forward than in English.

f, as in English.

g (hard) before *a*, *o*, *u*, = 'go': *Belga* 'Belgian,' *gola* 'throat,' *laguna* 'lagoon.'

g, *gg*, (soft) before *i* or *e*, = 'gin': *gente* 'people,' *gita* 'excursion.'

gh (used only before *i* or *e*), = 'go': *aghi* 'needles,' *botteghe* 'shops.'

gi before another vowel, = 'gin': *mangiare* 'to eat,' *Giovanni* 'John,' *giudice* 'judge.'

gli before *i*, = 'million': *gli* 'to him,' *figli* 'sons.' (But cf. 5, *c*)

gli before another vowel, = 'million': *gliè* 'to her,' *Bagliani*, *Pagliacci*.

gn, = 'canyon': *Bologna*.

h, silent.

l and **n**, pronounced with the tongue a little nearer the front teeth than in English.

m, **p**, **q**, as in English.

n before the hard sound of **c** or **g** or **q**, = *ng*: **franco** 'franc,' **fungo** 'mushroom,' **cinque** 'five.'

r, always rolled, especially when double.

s, = 'sir': **sę** 'if,' **sprone** 'spur.'

ş, = 'rose': **rşsa** 'rose,' **şmeraldo** 'emerald,' **şbaglio** 'mistake.'

sc before **i** or **e**, = *sh*: **scimmia** 'monkey,' **conşcere** 'to be acquainted with.'

sci before another vowel, = *sh*: **scià** 'shah,' **liscio** 'smooth,' **scięza** 'science.'

v, as in English.

z, = *ts*: **conversazione** 'conversation,' **pazzo** 'mad.'

z, = *dz*: **męzzo** 'half,' **dozzina** 'dozen,' **zero** 'zero.'

b. Double Consonants. Double consonants must be pronounced double, but without hiatus. Few single words (such as *unnatural*, *tailless*) present this phenomenon in English; but it is easily illustrated by combinations of two words, such as *mad dog*, *big gun*, *a mile long*, *room-mate*, *pine knot*, etc. Pronounce on this principle **bello** 'beautiful,' **terra** 'earth,' **Boccaccio**, **mşso** 'moved.'

Note that **cci** and **ggi** sound not as **c-ci** and **g-gi** but as **t-ci** and **d-gi**; similarly **cc** and **gg** before **e**. Also that **zz**, **zzz**, sound like **z**, **z**, not doubled.

This distinction between the single and double consonant should be carefully observed, as there are many words whose meaning, when spoken, would otherwise be mistaken. The following are some of these:

aringa herring
baco silkworm
bęla baa
camino hearth
canone large dog

arringa harangue
Bacco Bacchus
bęlla beautiful
cammino road
cannone cannon

casa house	cassa money-chest
copia plenty	coppia couple
dita fingers	ditta firm
Ino Ino	inno hymn
Luca Luke	Lucca the city
nōno ninth	nōnno grandfather
risa laughter	rissa quarrel
sonetto sonnet	sonnetto nap
Trācia Thrace	trāccia trace
vano vain	vanno they go

1. Similarly, **l**, **m**, **n**, **r**, in an accented syllable before another consonant, are prolonged, and pronounced as if double. **EXAMPLES:** **altro** (all-tro) 'other,' **quando** (quann-do) 'when,' **Dante** (dann-te), **novembre** (novemm-bre) 'November,' **porta** (porr-ta) 'door,' **anche** (ang-che) 'also,' **pongo** (pong-go) 'I put,' **stanco** (stang-co) 'tired,' **propinquo** (proping-quo) 'near.'

2. **Special Doublings.** A word ending in an accented vowel, or a monosyllable ending in a vowel, has in pronunciation the effect of doubling the initial consonant of the following word. Thus **Sì**, **Signora** 'Yes, madam,' is actually pronounced **siissignora**; **ma chē!** 'what!' is pronounced **macchè**; **va bene** 'all right,' **vabbene**; etc.

a. When compounds are made of words in such groups, the spelling follows the pronunciation. **EXAMPLES:** **più** 'more' and **tosto** 'soon' combine in **piuttosto** 'rather'; **chi** 'who,' **che** 'that,' and **sia** 'be,' in **chicchessia** 'whoever.'

b. The following words, although not accented on the last syllable, double the initial consonant of the following word: **come** 'how,' **dove** 'where,' **qualche** 'some,' **sopra** 'upon.' **EXAMPLES:** **comemmai** (**come mai**) 'how in the world,' **dovevva?** (**dove va**) 'where does he go?' **qualchevvolta** (**qualche volta**) 'sometimes,' and the compound **soprattutto** (**sopra tutto**) 'above all.'

c. The words **dio**, **dea**, **dēi**, **dēe**, 'god' and 'goddess,' singular and plural, double their initial consonant after any word ending in a vowel, as **belladēa** (**bella dea**) 'beautiful goddess.'

d. Doubling does not take place where there is any break in the sense between the two words; after a conjunctive pronoun object (cf. 94), because, being proclitic, it never takes the accent; or after a word ending with an apostrophe, as *sta' quiëto* 'be quiet,' unless the succeeding word be a conjunctive pronoun (see below).

e. But when the conjunctive object follows a form of the verb which is accented on the last syllable, even with the apostrophe, its initial consonant is doubled (cf. 100, *b*). EXAMPLES: *parlòmini* (*parlò mi*) 'he spoke to me,' *dille* (*dì' le*) 'tell her,' *fallo* (*fa' lo*) 'do it.'

c. *Gli* keeps the hard sound of *g* when preceded by *n*, as *ganglio* 'ganglion,' and in the words *geroglifico* 'hieroglyphic,' *glicerina* 'glycerine,' *negligente* 'negligent,' and a few others.

d. **Tuscan Peculiarities.** In Tuscan speech a single *c* or *g* between vowels of which the second is *i* or *e*, whether in the same word or in a group of two words, is softened, the *c* almost to *sh* and the *g* almost to *zh* (*s* in *pleasure*). A slight touch of this softening is an elegance of pronunciation anywhere in Italy. EXAMPLES: *diëci* 'ten,' *bugia* 'lie,' *ricëvere* 'to receive,' *diligënte* 'diligent,' *la gënte* 'the people,' *bella città* 'beautiful city.'

Likewise, a slight softening and aspirating of the hard *c* and *g*, and of *q*, to a sound approximating the German *ch*, is acceptable to the Tuscans, though the exaggeration of it heard among the lower classes is a vulgarism. This "attenuation" (which should not be adopted by foreigners without great discretion) occurs either at the beginning or in the middle of a word, if the consonant stands between two vowels, or is preceded by a vowel but followed by *r* or *l*. EXAMPLES: *nemico* 'enemy,' *ëquo* 'equal,' *lago* 'lake,' *quësta cösa* 'this thing,' *democrätico* 'democratic,' *agro* 'sour,' *la glötta* 'glottis,' *una classe* 'a class.'

e. **S and Z.** As with the close and open vowels, the rules cannot be made to fit all cases; accordingly in this

book **s** = *z* will be marked (in the vocabularies or when appearing for the first time in the text) **ş**, and **z** = *dz* will be marked **z**.

1. **S** is pronounced **s** :

a. When initial before a vowel, as in **santo** 'saint.'

b. When double, as in **rosso** 'red.'

c. When followed by **c**, **f**, **p**, **q**, **t**. EXAMPLES: **scala** 'stair,' **scherzo** 'joke,' **Schiavo** 'Slav,' **sfera** 'sphere,' **rispondere** 'to reply,' **aquila** 'bell,' **stanza** 'room.'

d. In words ending in **-eso** **-a** **-e** **-i** or **-oso** **-a** **-e** **-i**, with the vowel close (cf. 3, *c*, 7; *f*, 1, 3), and their derivatives. EXAMPLES: **atteso** 'awaited,' **impresa** 'enterprise,' **meşe** 'month,' **preşi** 'I took,' **generoso** 'generous,' **generosità** 'generosity,' **Tolosa** 'Toulouse,' **impose** 'he imposed,' **nascosi** 'I hid.'

EXCEPTIONS :

cortese kind

francese French

leşi -o, *from* **leşere** (*rare*) to damage

marchese marquis

paese country

palese evident

toşo shaven

2. **S** is pronounced **ş** :

a. When followed by **b**, **d**, **g**, **l**, **m**, **n**, **r**, or **v**. EXAMPLES: **şbaglio** 'mistake,' **şdegno** 'indignation,' **şgradevole** 'disagreeable,' **şlacciare** 'to unlace,' **entuşiasmo** 'enthusiasm,' **şnodare** 'to untie,' **şradicare** 'to eradicate,' **şvernare** 'to winter.'

b. Between two vowels, as in **aşilo** 'asylum,' with the following important exceptions :

(1) Cf. 1, *d*, above.

(2) When a prefix is set before a word normally beginning with **s**. EXAMPLES: **di-serrare** 'to unlock' (but **dişereditare** 'to disinherit'), **pro-secuzione** 'prosecution,' **pre-servare** 'to preserve,' **ri-sorgimento** 'resurrection,' **tręta-şei** 'thirty-six.'

INTRODUCTION

§ 5

(3) And in the following words :

annusare to smell at	parasito parasite
āsino donkey	Pisa
casa house	pisello pea
Chiusi a town	pōsa, ripōso, repose
chiusi -o, <i>from</i> chiūdere to close	raso satin
cōsa thing	Ricāsoli
così thus	rimasi I remained
desidērio desire	riso laugh
fuso spindle	susina plum

3. **Z** is pronounced **z** :

a. Before **ia, ie, io.** EXAMPLES: **pazzia** 'madness,' **grāzie** 'thank you,' **nazione** 'nation.'

b. In all words not listed under 4.

4. **Z** is pronounced **z** :

a. In verbs ending in **-izzare**, of more than four syllables in the infinitive ; as **organizzare** 'to organize.'

b. When single between two vowels, except as under 3, *a.*
EXAMPLES: **bizantino** 'Byzantine,' **Donizetti,** **ozono** 'ozone.'

c. When initial, except in the following words :

zācchera mud stain	zāzzera long hair	zittella spinster
zaffo bung	zēcca mint	zitto hush
zampa paw	zecchino sequin	zōccolo wooden shoe
zampillo fountain	zēppa wedge	zolfo sulphur
zampogna reed	zimbello decoy	zoppo lame
zana basket	zīngaro gipsy	zucca squash
zāngola charm	zinzino sip	zuccherò sugar
zanna tusk	zio uncle	zuffa fray
zappa mattock	zìpulo spigot	zūfolo whistle
zatta raft	zirlare to whistle	zuppa broth

d. In the following words :

aguzzino slave-driver	azzurro blue	brōnzo bronze
amāzzone amazon	brēzza breeze	donzella damsel

dozzina dozen	orzo barley
gazze gazelle	pettegolezze gossip
gazze gazette	pranzo dinner
ghiribizzo caprice	razzo spoke
Lazzaro Lazarus	ribrezzo shiver
lazzaretto pest-house	romanzo novel
lezzo unpleasant odor	ronzo buzzing
magazzino storehouse	scorza bark
marzocco lion of Florence	zanzara mosquito
mezzo half, middle	zenzero ginger
orizzonte horizon	

And the following less common words, and others still more uncommon :

arzigogolo	bonzo	gazza	olezzo	suzzacchera
arzilla	bazzima	ghezzo	penzolo	suzzato
azzimo	bizzo ('pool')	ghiizzo	razza (fish)	avverza
baragozzo	buzzo	grezzo	rezzo	vericare
barzelletta	calenzuolo	intirizzare	rozzo	veriere
bazza	eczema	lacchezzo	rubizzo	zizzania
bazzana	Elzeviri	lazzaruola	ruzzo	zizzola
bazzoffia	frizzo	lazzo	scarza	zonzo
belzuino	fronzolo	manzo	sfarzo	zozza
Belzebù	ganzo	Manzoni	sgabuzzino	
bizza	garza	mozzo ('hub')	sizza	
bizziffe	garzo	Nazzareno	sozzo	

A few words differ in meaning according to whether the **z** is "voiced" (**z**) or "unvoiced" (**z**), among which are the following :

bizzo pool	bizzo sketch
mezzo half, middle	mezzo wet, ripe
mozzo hub	mozzo cabin-boy
razza ray (fish)	razza race, lineage

NOTE. In derived words, **s** or **z** keeps the sound that it has in the root word, even contrary to rule. EXAMPLES: **sorriso** 'smile' from **riso**, **ronzio** 'continued buzzing' from **ronzo**.

III. SYLLABIFICATION

The division of words into syllables is very exact in Italian.

6. Nearly all syllables must end in a vowel, which may be preceded by as many as three consonants. **EXAMPLES :** *ca-sa, ta-sca, a-vrò, ri-u-sci-re, e-strè-mo, şbra-na-re, e-spri-me, mi-glio, va-ghe, tç-sto, Ti-şbe, fi-nè-stra, sfu-ma-re.*

7. But double consonants, and groups consisting of a liquid (l, r) or nasal (m, n) followed by a mute (b, c, d, g, p, t) or spirant (f, v, s, z), or of a liquid and a nasal, are divided. **EXAMPLES :** *qua-drèt-ti, bøl-lo, bus-se, al-lac-ciati, da-van-zale, sçn-to, sel-cia-to, rim-bòm-bo, mar-mo, sçn-do, al-tro, sin-ç-ro, Ar-no, al-ma, stir-pe, or-gò-glio.*

8. Words to be divided at the end of a line of print or writing must be divided on these principles, and an apostrophe may never be left at the end of a line. For example, *tutt' altro, all' Italia*, must be divided *tut-t' altro, al-l' Italia*.

IV. TONIC ACCENT

9. The distribution of the tonic accent, or the question on which syllable of a word to lay the stress, is one of the chief difficulties of Italian pronunciation for the foreigner. A few rules may be given, but there are many exceptions. The accentuation of a word, like its gender, should be learned along with its meaning. In this book, all stressed antepenults, and i when accented in the final groups *ia, ie, io, ii*, will be marked with a macron, thus : *gōndola, Signoria*.

10. The majority of Italian words are accented on the penult, and are called *parole piane* : *vèdo* 'I see,' *luna* 'moon,' *inveçe* 'instead,' *reverberare* 'reverberate,' *finirète* 'you will finish.'

11. Words accented on the last syllable are called **parole tronche**: **poichè** 'since,' **virtù** 'virtue,' **curiosità** 'curiosity.'

12. Words accented on the antepenult are called **parole sdrucciole**: **cēlebre** 'famous,' **ammīrano** 'they admire,' **organīz-zano** 'they organize.'

13. Those accented on the syllable preceding the antepenult are called **bisdruciole**: **andāndosene** 'going away,' **cēlebrano** 'they celebrate.'

a. Most of these are the third persons plural of verbs having more than three syllables in the infinitive, of which the first person singular is accented on the antepenult; but it is not easy to be sure whether the first person singular is so accented in a given instance. However, if the verb be derived from a noun, and when the first person singular will follow the accent of the noun; and when the infinitive ends in **-borare**, **-iugare**, **-iuvare**, **-ipare**, **-minare** preceded by a single vowel, or **-erare** preceded by a liquid + a mute, or its ending is preceded by a mute + a liquid, the first person singular will be accented on the antepenult. But if the infinitive ending is preceded by any two consonants except a mute and a liquid, the first person singular will be accented on the penult. EXAMPLES: **inganno** 'deceit,' **inganno** 'I deceive,' **ingānnano** 'they deceive'; **ōpera** 'work,' **ōpero** 'I work,' **ōperano** 'they work'; **integrare** 'to complete,' **integrano** 'they complete'; **corroborare** 'to corroborate,' **corrōboro**; **coniugare** 'to conjugate,' **cōniugano**; **dissipare** 'to dissipate,' **dissipo**; **seminare** 'to sow,' **sēmino**; **illuminare** 'to illuminate,' **illūminano**; **camminare** 'to walk,' **cammino**.

NOTE. In verbs of Latin derivation, the quantity of the vowel in the penult of the first person singular of the root verb is a fairly safe guide to the tonic accent in the Italian derivative. EXAMPLES: **indīco** > **indico**, **īmītor** > **imito** or **imito**, **conjūro** > **congiuro**.

14. The syllable that receives the tonic accent is usually a few tones higher in pitch than the others, particularly in the important

word of the sentence. The failure to observe this difference will make even well-pronounced Italian sound foreign. Sometimes, as in calling to a distant person, the tonic accent will be an octave above :

Su, Corrado,

Vieni a veder che Dio per grazia volse.

(Oh, Corrado, come and see what God has willed !)

In exclamations, or in questions expressing amazement or incredulity, and to some extent in all speech, the whole sentence takes a kind of tonic accent. This falls sometimes on the first syllable of the sentence. A comparison of the sentences "*Are* you going to-day?" "Are you *going* to-day?" "Are you going *to-day*?" will illustrate this, but in Italian such variety is not reserved exclusively for particular rhetorical effects. English as spoken in England presents a closer analogy than American speech to this peculiarity of Italian.

15. Many words are distinguished in meaning from their homonyms only by the tonic accent. The following are a few of these :

ancōra still	āncora anchor
capitāno captain	cāpitano <i>from</i> capitare to fall
compīto <i>from</i> compire to fulfill	cōmpito task
Cupīdo Cupid	cūpido eager
impāri <i>from</i> imparare to learn	īmpari uneven
pagāno pagan	pāgano <i>from</i> pagare to pay
perdōno pardon	pērdono <i>from</i> perdere to lose
princīpi beginnings, principles	prīncipi princes
rubīno ruby	rūbino <i>from</i> rubare to rob

V. WORDS FOR PRACTICE IN PRONUNCIATION

16. For practice on the consonants :

pazzo	svisceratezza	sgattigliare	santo
scianto	ella	lascio	sguaglianza
macchia	Brescia	sonno	giungeva
Guglielmo	stortigliatura	montagna	glauche
floscio	stagno	sfoglia	negli
sragionevole	staiuolo	scrocio	somigliano
segni	fatto	bagagli	occhio
vecchio	malizia	somiglianza	chicche
sgagliardare	ingegno	luoghi	sciogliere
curiosa	guai	srugginire	svolazzatoio
allo	lusinghiero	ghiacciai	sferza
lasciare	pioggia	secco	azzurro
scricchiolare	slanciamiento	sdraiare	sfilacciatura
sfregiare	svogliatamente	seccia	accostandogli
attesa	Russia	uscio	sceglie
secche	sbirracchio	figlioccia	gloriosa
ginocchi	sloggiare	secchita	chiacchierare
sfregacciare	bianche	smemorataccio	sassoso
tedeschi	roccia	stovigliaio	villaggio
dramma	disse	sciente	svegliamento
gloria	scheggetta	qualche	scusa
sghimbescio	smagio	bisbiglio	sguardo
scrichiolano	tacque	stanche	giudizio
gigli	zero	vizio	fertilizzare

17. For practice on close and open vowels :

allora	Londra	Siena	dolce
forestiere	settembre	elemosina	parente
solenne	senza	bronzo	borchia
luogo	legno	togliere	buono
rotondo	dormitorio	Maremma	moda
membro	deplora	inchiostro	donna
fuori	prendo	Orfeo	femmina
milanese	colmo	contento	insolenza

INTRODUCTION

§§ 17-20

cielo	nōcciolo	Raffaello	Po
silenzio	piega	ecco	Pietro
talvolta	penitenza	ponte	Spezzia
allegrezza	faticoso	chieso	atteso

VI. GRAPHIC ACCENTS

18. Three graphic accents are used in Italian: the grave (˘), the most common; the circumflex (ˆ), used in a few cases; and the acute (´), which is rare in Italian.

19. The grave accent is used —

a. On final accented vowels of words of more than one syllable.

EXAMPLES: *virtù* 'virtue,' *città* 'city.'

b. On final vowels of monosyllables to indicate a diphthong.

EXAMPLES: *può* 'he can,' *più* 'more.'

c. On the truncated forms (cf. 31, *a*; 48, *c*) of the poetic past absolutes in *-aro*, *-iro*, *-ero*, to distinguish them from the truncated infinitives of the same verbs. Thus, *amàr* = *amaro* (*amārono*), not *amare*.

d. On monosyllables that have been combined with some other word or prefix, in order to keep the tonic accent in the same place.

EXAMPLES: *fa* 'makes,' *rifà* 'remakes'; *re* 'king,' *vicere* 'viceroy.'

e. On certain monosyllables in common use, to distinguish them from others identical in spelling but of different meaning.

<i>che</i> that	<i>chè</i> because	<i>la, li, articles</i>	<i>là, lì, there</i>
<i>da</i> from	<i>dà</i> gives	<i>ne</i> of it, of them	<i>nè</i> neither
<i>di</i> of	<i>dì</i> day	<i>se</i> if	<i>sè</i> himself
<i>e</i> and	<i>è</i> is	<i>si</i> himself	<i>sì</i> so, yes
<i>fe</i> ' he did	<i>fè</i> faith	<i>te</i> thee	<i>tè</i> tea

20. The circumflex is used on certain shortened forms such as *tòrre* (*tògliere*) 'to take away,' and often over final *i* when it represents *ii*. EXAMPLE: *desiderio* 'desire,' *pl. desi-deri* (written also *desiderii*, *desiderj*).

21. The acute accent is used —

a. To indicate that a certain word with close *e* or *o* is meant, and not its homonym with open vowel; as *tòsco*, indicating the poetic word for Tuscan, instead of *tòsco* 'poison.'

b. In poetry, when the tonic accent is altered to suit the rhythm.

c. In dictionaries it serves to indicate the close vowels, and the grave the open.

d. The tendency is increasing among grammarians to encourage the use of the acute accent over final *i* and *u*, and final close *e* and *o*, when these are accented.

VII. ELISION

22. Elision is the omission of the final vowel of one word before the initial vowel of the following word. It takes place only between two words closely bound together in sense, as verb and subject or object, preposition and object, adjective or article and noun; and any pause or punctuation mark prevents its use. It is indicated by the apostrophe. **EXAMPLES:** *l' uòmo* 'the man,' *nell' aria* 'in the air,' *tutt' altro* (cf. 8). It may occur in the following cases, but is most usual with the articles.

23. In the articles *lo*, *la*, *gli*, *le*, alone or when contracted with prepositions (cf. 75). *Gli* is elided only before *i*; *le* only before *e*, and then not if the word is unchanged in the plural. **EXAMPLES:** *l(o)' amico* 'the friend,' *l(a)' anima* 'the soul,' *dell(o)' amore* 'of love,' *all(a)' amica* 'to the friend' (f.), *l(e)' erbe* 'the herbs,' *gl(i)' Inglesi* 'the English,' *le età* 'the ages,' *gli uomini* 'the men.'

24. In the singular feminine form of the indefinite article: *un(a)' ora* 'an hour.'

25. In the pronoun objects **mi**, **ti**, **si**, **vi**, **ne**, **lo**; and **ci** before **i** or **e**. EXAMPLES: **m' abito** 'I accustom myself,' **t' insegna** 'he teaches thee,' **s' intende** 'that is understood,' **n' ha parlato** 'he has spoken of it,' **l' aspetto** 'I await him,' **c' imita** 'he imitates us,' **c' erano** 'there were.'

26. In the pronouns **ogni**, **questo**, **quello**, **codesto**, **altro**, **nulla**, **niente**; the adverbs **poco**, **tanto**, **quanto**; the prepositions **di**, **da**, **oltre**, **presso**, and **senza**, in certain adverbial expressions; the adjectives **santo**, **bello**, and **buono**, when immediately followed by their substantives; the conjunctions **anche**, **che**, **dove**, **onde**, **come**, and **se** before **e**; and the numerals **secondo**, **terzo**, **quarto**, **quattro**, **cinque**, **décimo**, etc., **venti**, **trènta**, **cènto**, **mille**, **mezzo**.

EXAMPLES: **ogn' altro** 'every other,' **quest' animale** 'this animal,' **quell' amico** 'that friend,' **codest' uomo** 'that man,' **altr' ieri** 'day before yesterday,' **null' uomo** 'no man,' **nient' affatto** 'nothing at all,' **poc' altro** 'little else,' **tant' è** 'so it is,' **quant' oro** 'how much gold,' **tazza d(i)' acqua** 'cup of water,' **oltr' Arno** 'beyond the Arno,' **press' a poco** 'nearabout,' **senz' altro** 'without delay,' **d(a)' allora** 'from then,' **Sant' Ūrsola** 'Saint Ursula,' **bèll' aria** 'beautiful air,' **buon' anima** 'good soul,' **dov' è** 'where is it?' **anch' io** 'I too,' **còm' è** 'how is it?' **ond' andò** 'whence he went,' **ch' hanno** 'that they have,' **s' è vero** 'if it is true,' **second' anno** 'second year,' **terz' ultimo** 'third from the last,' **quattr' arance** 'four oranges,' **vent' anni** 'twenty years,' **mill' anni** 'a thousand years,' **mezz' ora** 'a half-hour.'

27. In the first and third persons singular of verbs before a pronoun subject; and in the third person singular of the past future before a word beginning with **e**. EXAMPLES: **diss' io** 'said I,' **dic' egli** 'says he,' **potrèbb' essere** 'it might be.'

28. In the following contracted forms:

a' for ai to the
bè' for bene well

mò' for modo manner
nè' for nei in the

cq' for coi with the
da' for dai from the
de' for dei of the
di' for dici say
e' for ei he
fe' for fece he did
fra' for frai among the
gua' for guarda look
ma' for mali evils
me' for meglio better

pe' for pei for the
po' for poco little
pro' for prode brave
que' for quei those
su' for sui on the
te' for tieni hold
to' for togli take away
tra' for trai among the
ve' for vedi see
vo' for voglio I will

NOTE. All these contractions are used in speech with the greatest frequency, but their use in the written language depends upon the discretion and taste of the author. The forms *be'*, *di'*, *gua'*, *te'*, are Tuscan popular forms; *ma'*, *me'*, *pro'*, are poetic forms; the others are admissible in prose.

VIII. APOCOPATION

29. Apocopation (*troncamento*) is the dropping of the final unaccented vowel or sometimes syllable of a word under certain conditions, as *amor* for *amore*, *val* for *valle*, *caval* for *cavallo*.

30. It takes place only under the following conditions:

- a.* In a word of more than one syllable, not accented on the last.
- b.* When the final vowel (as a rule not *a*, cf. 32) is immediately preceded by *l*, *n*, *r*, rarely *m*.
- c.* When the word to be apocopated is not followed by one beginning with two consonants or (generally speaking) a vowel, and is not (in prose) a plural substantive.
- d.* When the two words are closely bound together without pause or break in the sense. EXAMPLES: *andar(e) via* 'to go away,' *nobil(e) donna* 'noble lady,' *bene(e) fatto* 'well done,' *ci siamo(o)* 'we are all here,' *caval(lo) di battaglia* 'war horse,' *un(o) bel(lo) giorno* 'a fine day.'

31. Words regularly apocopated are —

a. Those ending in **-le**, **-lo**, **-llo**, **-ano**, **-eno**, **-ino**, **-ono**, **-nno**, **-ne**, **-re**, **-ero**. EXAMPLES: **cattedral(e)** 'cathedral,' **vuol(e)** 'he will,' **figliuol(o)** 'son,' **castel(lo)** 'castle,' **man(o)** 'hand,' **frën(o)** 'check,' **fin(o)** 'till,' **fan(no)** 'they do,' **diran(no)** 'they will say,' **buon(o)** 'good,' **viën(e)** 'comes,' **mar(e)** 'sea,' **par(e)** 'appears,' **pensiër(o)** 'thought.'

b. The words **uom(o)** 'man,' **insiëm(e)** 'together,' **un(o)** 'one' and its compounds, **doman(i)** 'to-morrow,' **fuor(i)** 'outside,' **iër(i)** 'yesterday,' **pöver(o)** (only before a vowel) 'poor,' **par(o)** 'pair'; the first person plural of verbs in **-mo** (not **-mmo**), as **sarëm** 'we shall be,' **andavam** 'we were going'; and the third person plural in **-ro**, as **sëpper(o)** 'they knew,' **potrëbber(o)** 'they might,' **fösser(o)** 'they would be.'

c. Titles before proper names, or one proper name before another. EXAMPLES: **dottor(e)** **Antönio** 'Doctor Anthony,' **signor(e)** **Bondi** 'Mr. Bondi,' **Giovan(ni)** **Battista** 'John the Baptist,' **Val(le)** **di Chiana** 'Valley of the Chiana,' **Antön(io)** **Piëtro** 'Anthony Peter,' **Piër(o)** **Antönio** 'Peter Anthony.'

d. In poetry: plurals in **-ni**, **-ri**; nouns in **-iro**, **-oro**, nouns and adjectives in **-aro**, **-uro**, and adjectives in **-ero**; *parole sdruciole* in **-re**; and **van(o)** 'vain,' **san(o)** 'sane,' **ver(o)** 'true,' **color(o)**, **costor(o)**, 'those.' EXAMPLES: **can(i)** 'dogs,' **pensiër(i)** 'thoughts,' **acciar(o)** 'steel,' **sicur(o)** 'sure,' **dur(o)** 'hard,' **gir(o)** 'circle,' **lavor(o)** 'labor,' **fiër(o)** 'proud.'

32. Irregular apocopations are **or(a)** 'hour' and its compounds, **suor(a)** 'Sister' (a nun), **fra(te)** 'Brother' (a friar), **sol(a)** 'only,' **san(to)** 'Saint,' and **gran(de)** 'large' (cf. 85). EXAMPLES: **or ora** 'just now,' **finor** 'until now,' **suor Maria** 'Sister Mary,' **fra Giròlamo** 'Brother Jerome,' **una sol volta** 'just once,' **san Luigi** 'Saint Louis,' **gran caso** 'important circumstance.'

33. Apocopation does not affect the tonic accent. As it may be used in poetry before a pause or at the end of a line, apocopation provides "masculine endings" which otherwise could scarcely occur in Italian verse.

IX. VARIANT FORMS OF WORDS

34. For a good many words there are two different, equally correct forms, though one will be generally preferred, and the other often confined in its use to Tuscany. Compare English *crawfish*, *crayfish*; *toward*, *towards*; *special*, *especial*. Among such variable words are —

altiero, *altiero*, 'haughty'; *angelo*, *angiolo*, 'angel'; *castigo*, *gastigo*, 'punishment'; *ceppo*, *cippo*, 'log'; *ciliègia*, *ciriègia*, 'cherry'; *crōnaca*, *crōnica*, 'chronicle'; *decembre*, *dicembre*, 'December'; *denaro*, *danaro*, 'money'; *domani*, *dimani*, 'to-morrow'; *forestière*, *forestiero*, 'foreigner'; *nativo*, *natio*, 'native'; *nervo*, *nerbo*, 'nerve'; *nuovo*, *novo*, 'new'; *Pancrazio*, *Brancazio*, 'Pancras'; *pellegrino*, *peregrino*, 'pilgrim'; *rinunziare*, *rinunciare*, 'to renounce'; *riva*, *ripa*, 'bank'; *scirocco*, *siròcco*, 'sirocco.'

In addition to such sporadic divergences, there are certain principles of variation, as follows:

35. Apheresis. The first syllable is sometimes dropped, as in *evangelo*, *vangelo*, 'gospel'; *arēna*, *rēna*, 'sand.'

36. Syncope. The middle syllable is sometimes dropped. EXAMPLES: *ōpera*, *ōpra*, 'work'; *anderò*, *andrò*, 'I shall go'; *tōgliere*, *tōrre*, 'to take away'; *onorēvole*, *orrēvole*, 'honorable.'

37. Apocope. The last syllable may be dropped, as in *fede*, *fè*, 'faith'; *piède*, *piè*, 'foot'; *umiltade*, *umiltà*, 'humility'; *su* and *giù* 'up' and 'down' for *suso* and *giuso* (now current

only in poetry); and (in poetry only) *amaro*, *finiro*, *temëro* (cf. 48, c), etc., for *amārono*, *finirono*, *temërono*, 'they loved,' 'they finished,' 'they feared.'

38. Prefixion of *i*. When a word ending in a consonant is followed by one beginning with *s impure* (cf. 59, a, 1), an *i* is prefixed to the latter to prevent the juxtaposition of too many consonants. This is more common in speaking than in writing. **EXAMPLES:** *in i-stiva* 'in the hold,' *për i-scherzo* 'in jest.'

39. Conversely, the words *a* 'to,' *e* 'and,' *o* 'or,' and *su* 'on,' may become respectively *ad*, *ed*, *od*, *sur* before a word beginning with a vowel, especially if it is the same one. **EXAMPLES:** *ad esempio* 'for example,' *ad Anna* 'to Anna,' *ed ebbe* 'and he had,' *o ferro od oro* 'either iron or gold,' *sur una tãvola* 'on a table.'

40. Metathesis. Letters may be reversed, as in *sũcido* for *sũdicio* 'dirty.'

X. CAPITALIZATION

41. Italian capitalization is in general governed according to the same rules as English, but presents the following differences of usage:

42. Capitals are usually omitted, contrary to English usage,

a. From all but the first word of book titles, unless the title consist of but one noun and its article. **EXAMPLES:** *Alcune relazioni del Fõscolo con la letteratura tedẽska* 'Certain Relations between Foscolo and German Literature,' *Il Santo* 'The Saint.'

b. From proper adjectives, sometimes even used substantively. **EXAMPLES:** *il põpolo toscano* 'the Tuscan people,' *le guerre napoleõniche* 'the Napoleonic wars,' *il linguaggio manzoniano* 'the language of Manzoni,' *i Tedẽschi* 'the Germans.'

c. From titles, when followed by a proper name. **EXAMPLES:** *don Carlo* 'Don Carlos,' *dottor Antonio* 'Doctor Anthony,' *il principe Umberto* 'Prince Humbert,' *il signor Martini* 'Mr. Martini.'

d. From the names of the days and the months. **EXAMPLES:** *venerdì* 'Friday,' *luglio* 'July.'

e. In most contemporary poetry, from the first word of each line, unless the rules of prose would call for it.

NOTE. Usage in Italian books will often be found to vary considerably from these rules, which have, however, the support of the best authorities.

43. Capitals are used, though not invariably, for the more formal pronoun of address which is borrowed from the third person (cf. 65, a). **EXAMPLES:** *Lèi*, *Ella*, *Loro* 'you' (singular and plural), *Suo* 'your,' *Lè* 'to you.'

XI. ARCHAIC AND POETIC FORMS

44. In Italian poetry and old Italian occur many forms unfamiliar to the student of modern Italian prose. The following are the most important of such variations:

45. In general, open e and o often replace respectively ie and uo: *tèn* for *tiene*, *lòco* for *luogo*, etc.; and e is often added to a final vowel, as in *èe* for *è*, *tue* for *tu*, etc.

46. **Nouns.** Nouns in *-allo*, *-ello*, often form their plural in *-ai*, *-agli*, *-ei*, *-egli*: *cavallo*, *pl. caval*, *cavagli*; *fratello*, *pl. fratèi*, *fratègli*.

47. **Pronouns.** The forms *mèl*, *tèl*, *sèl*, etc. are very common substitutes for *mè lo*, *tè lo*, *sè lo*, etc.; *mèn*, *tèn*, etc., for *mè nè*, *tè nè*, etc.; and *nòl* for *nòn lo*.

48. Verb-Endings in Particular Tenses.

a. Present Indicative: in the first person plural, *-lêmo, -êmo, -imo*, for *-iamo*.

b. Past Descriptive: in the first and third persons singular of the second and third conjugations, *v* is often dropped: *temêa* for *temêva*, *seguia* for *seguiva*.

c. Past Absolute: in the third singular, *temêo, finio*, for *temê, finì*; in the third plural, *trovaro, trovar, trovarno, trovōrono, trovōnno*, for *trovārono*; *colpiro, colpir, colpinno, for colpīrono*; *temêro, temêr, temēnno, for temêrono*.

d. Future: in the first person singular, *-aggio, -abbo, for -o*; in the third plural, *-āggiono, -ābbono, for -anno*: *troveraggio, troverabbo, for troverō*; *finirāggiono, finirābbono, for finiranno*, etc.

e. Past Future: in the first and third singular, *-ia* for *-ei, -ebbe*; *troveria* for *troverēi, troverēbe*, etc.; in the third plural, *-iano, -ēbbono, for -ēbbero*: *finiriano, finirēbbono, for finirēbbero*, etc.

f. Present Subjunctive: in the singular, *e* for *i* in the first conjugation, *i* for *a* in the second and third: *trōve, finischi, temi*, for *trōvi, finisca, tema*.

g. Past Subjunctive: in the first person singular, *e* for *i*: *trovasse, finisse, temesse*, for *trovassi, finissi, temessi*. In the third plural, *-āssino, -āsseno, -āssono, for -āssero*; *-ēssino, -ēsseno, -ēssono, for -ēssero*; and *-issino, -isseno, -issono for -issero*: *trovāssino* etc., *finissino* etc., *temēssino* etc.

h. Past Participle: in the first conjugation *-at-* is omitted, leaving such forms as *acconcio* for *acconciato*, *cārico* for *caricato*.

49. Special Forms of Particular Verbs:

a. *Avere*: *aggio, abbo, avo, aio*, for *hō*; *aggia, aia*, for *abbia*; *ei, ēbbimo*, for *ēbbi, avēmmo*; *arō* etc. for *avrō* etc., and similar forms in the conditional.

b. *Dare*: *diē* for *diēde*; *diēr, diēro, diērono*, for *diēdero*.

c. *Dovere*: present indicative *dèò, dèi, dèe, dovèmo, dovète, dèono* or *dènno*.

d. *Èssere*: *eramo, erate*, for *eravamo, eravate*; *sèm, sète*, for *siamo, siète*; *enno, en*, for *sono* (pl.); *sie, sieno*, for *sia, siano*; *u* for *o* in the past absolute and past subjunctive; *furo, fòro*, for *fùrono*, and *fue* for *fu*; *fia, fiano* or *fieno*, for *sarà, saranno*; *fòra, fòrano*, for *sarèi, sarèbbe, sarèbbero*; *sèndo* for *essèndc*; *suto, essuto, issuto*, for *stato*.

e. *Fare*: *faci, face*, for *fai, fa*; a past descriptive *fèa* etc.; a past absolute *fèi, fèsti, fè* or *fèo, fèmmo, fèste, fèrono, fèr, fènno*.

f. *Potère*: a past future *poria* etc.; *puòte, pònno*, for *può, pòssono*.

g. *Volère*: *vuogli* or *vuoli* for *vuoi*; *vòlsi, vòlse, vòlsero*, for *vòlli, vòlle, vòllero*.

XII. VERSIFICATION

50. Italian versification is reckoned not in feet but in syllables. These are grouped and divided by the "rhythmic accent," which falls at least twice in every line, on the penultimate syllable and at least one other.

Nel mezzo del cammin di nostra vita.

51. An Italian verse or line, like an Italian word, is either *piano*, *tronco*, or *sdrùcciolo*, according as the closing accent falls on the penultimate, ultimate, or antepenultimate syllable. But all lines are counted as *piani*, since if represented in musical notation the time would be the same; that is, the accented ultimate of a *verso tronco* would equal the two syllables of a *verso piano*, while the last two short syllables of a *verso sdrùcciolo* would be no longer than the final unaccented one of a *verso piano*. For example, in the following stanza each line is counted as having seven syllables:

INTRODUCTION

§§ 51-54

Tu che, da tanti **sēcoli**,
Soffri, combatti e **preghi**;
Che le tue **tēde spieghi**
Dall' uno all' altro **mar**.

52. Elision always occurs when a word ending in a vowel is followed by a word beginning with one, and the two syllables are counted, not pronounced, as one. There are two in the above selection, **combatti e** and **uno all'**, and it would be difficult to find a stanza in which there was no example of elision.

53. Diphthongs are counted as two syllables at the end of a verse, and usually as one in the middle. But those which begin with **i** are often, and others sometimes, counted as two in the middle of a verse, and are then marked with a diæresis.

Di tal sup̄bia qui si paga il fio.
Se buōna oraziōn lui non aīta.

a. Triphthongs are counted usually as one syllable.

E come già sei dē' **miei** rari amici.

54. Number of Syllables. Italian verses are classified as either even-numbered (**parisillabi**) or odd-numbered (**imparisillabi**) according as the number of syllables is even or odd. The *parisillabi* are often *tronchi* but rarely *sdruc-cioli*; the *imparisillabi* may be either. There are four varieties of each:

a. Parisillabi:

The four-syllabled verse (**quaternario**) and the eight-syllabled (**ottonario**) give the effect of trochaic meter.

Ben è ver, quando è giocondo
Ride il mondo,
Ride il ciel quando è gioioso;
Ben è ver; ma non san poi
Come voi
Fare un riso grazioso.

1. The six-syllabled verse (**senārio**) is amphibrachic:

Stringiamci a cōrte,
Siam prōnti alla mōrte:
Italia chiamò!

2. The ten-syllabled verse (**decasillabo**) is anapæstic:

Oh giornate del nōstro riscatto!
Oh dolēte per sēmpre colui
Che da lunge, dal labbro d' altrui,
Cōme un uōmo straniēro, le udrà.

b. Imparisillabi:

1. The seven-syllabled (**settenārio**) and eleven-syllabled (**endecasillabo**) verses are the most employed of all: the latter is iambic in effect; the former, either iambic or anapæstic. The two are often combined:

Non è quēsto un morire,
Immortal Margherita,
Ma un passar anzi tēpo a l' altra vita.

Benigne stēlle che compagne fērse
Al fortunato fianco
Quando 'l bel parto già nel mōdo scōrse!

2. The *endecasillabo*, or heroic measure (**vērso erōico**), when *tronco*, corresponds exactly to a line of English blank verse; when normally *piano*, to one of feminine ending. It may also be *sdrucciolo*.

O fōlle Aragne, sì vedēa io tē
Già mēzza aragna, trista in su gli stracci
Dell' ōpera chē mal pēr tē si fē'.

Innanzi assai ch' all' ōpra inconsumābile
Fōsse la gente di Nembrot attēta.

3. The five-syllabled verse (**quinārio**), when accented on the first syllable, gives the effect of a dactyl plus a spondee; when

accented on the second, of an iamb plus an amphibrach. It is sometimes combined with the *endecasillabo*.

Oh bell' andare
Per barca in mare
Verso la sera
Di primavera!

Chieser mercè de l'alta stërpe e de la
Gloria di Roma.

4. The nine-syllabled verse (*novenário*) is variously accented, but never very effective or musical.

Fu sposa, fu madre felice.
Quel rubino ch'è il mio tesoro.
A duro stral di ria ventura.

55. Rhyme. The rhyme-word is *piano* or *tronco*, rarely *sdrucchiolo*. Close and open vowels may rhyme with each other, and the voiced and unvoiced *s* and *z*; but not *z* and *z*. The same word may be used as rhyme-word, if taken in a different meaning. Thus *chiessa* may rhyme with *impresa*, *roşa* with *gloriosa*, *pure* 'pure' with *pure* 'however,' but not *mezza* with *tenerezza*.

56. Blank Verse is written in unrhymed *endecasillabi*, and is called *verso sciolto*.

57. Strophes. Strophes are formed of lines combined in a certain pattern. They are often grouped in pairs, their final verses rhyming on a word that is *tronco*, which makes a ringing sonorous effect among the more numerous feminine endings. The following are the commoner forms of strophe:

Terza rima, the measure of the "Divina Commedia," is made up of *endecasillabi* grouped in threes, and rhyming *aba bcb cdc*.

The **quartina** consists of four lines rhyming *abab* or *abba*.

The **sestina** consists of six lines, rhyming **abbacc** or **ababcc**.

Ottava rima consists of eight *endecasillabi*, rhyming **abababcc**.

The sonnet is the sonnet of English poetry, composed of *endecasillabi*. The octave must have but two rhyme-sounds, rhyming either **abba** on the Petrarchan or **abab** on the Shakespearean model.

The Petrarchan strophe is an extremely complicated arrangement of *endecasillabi* and *settenari*, in usually from nine to twenty lines. It is divided into two parts: the first, of six or eight lines, with intricate rhyme-scheme; the second an arrangement of tercets and couplets, connected with the first by a line (called the **chiave**, 'key') which rhymes with the one preceding it.

The old **sestina** is a form composed of six stanzas of six lines each, and a seventh stanza of three lines. These are unrhymed, but the end words of the first stanza are repeated in all the others, after a fixed order, the last word in the first line of each stanza being identical with that of the last line of the one preceding. The seventh stanza has one of these words at the end, and one in the middle, of each of its three lines.

LESSON I

INDEFINITE ARTICLE

58. Indefinite Article.

MASCULINE SINGULAR

un
uno

FEMININE SINGULAR

una
un'

59. Masculine. *a. Un* is used before a masculine noun beginning with a vowel, or with any consonant except *s impure* or *z*.

Un padre
Un uomo

A father
A man

1. The *s impure* is *s* followed by another consonant.

b. Uno is used before a masculine noun beginning with *s impure* or *z*.

Uno schioppo
Uno zio

A gun
An uncle

60. Feminine. *Una* is used before a feminine noun beginning with a consonant.

a. Una becomes *un'* before a vowel.

Una madre
Un' ora

A mother
An hour

61. The article in Italian, whether definite or indefinite, must be repeated before each noun.

Un ragazzo e una ragazza

A boy and girl

62. Interrogative sentences. *a.* The interrogative is commonly expressed merely by the inflection of the voice and the use of the interrogation point.

La donna parla a un ragazzo The woman speaks to a boy
La donna parla a un ragazzo? Does the woman speak to a boy?

b. The order may be inverted, the subject being thrown at the very end of the sentence.

Parla a un ragazzo **la donna**? Does the woman speak to a boy?
 Torna a mezzogiorno **il padre**? Does the father return at noon?

1. 'Do' or 'does,' used as auxiliary, does not exist in Italian.

63. Present Indicative of the Three Conjugations.

'I find,' 'am finding,' *etc.* 'I lose,' 'am losing,' *etc.* 'I understand,' *etc.*

trovo	troviamo	perdo	perdiamo	capisco	capiamo
trovi	trovate	perdi	perdete	capisci	capite
trova	trovano	perde	perdono	capisce	capiscono

a. Subject pronouns are usually omitted, except when required for clearness or emphasis.

VOCABULARY

un bambino a child, little boy	una bambina a child, little girl
un libro a book	una madre a mother
un padre a father	una scuola a school
un panchetto a stool, footstool	a, ad (<i>cf.</i> 39) to, at
uno schioppo a gun	dice (<i>fr.</i> dire, <i>irr.</i>) says
uno scolare a pupil	dicono (they) say
parlare speak	dopo after
tornare return	mezzogiorno noon
finire finish	Buon giorno! Good morning!
rispondere reply	Buona sera! Good evening!
ecco here is, here are	e, ed (<i>cf.</i> 39) and
il the (<i>m.</i>)	la the (<i>f.</i>)
tutti all, everybody (<i>pl. verb</i>)	

EXERCISE**I. READING LESSON**

Buon giorno! — dice un bambino. — Buon giorno! — rispondono il padre e la madre. — Buon giorno! — dicono tutti. Il bambino torna a scuola e dice — Buon giorno! — ad uno scolare. Dopo mezzogiorno tutti dicono — Buona sera!

II

1. Finisco; torna; perdiamo; rispondete; trovano; capiscono; finisci. 2. Ecco un libro ed un panchetto. 3. Ecco un bambino ed una bambina. 4. Finiamo un libro. 5. Parla ad uno scolare. 6. Risponde — Buona sera! 7. Un padre e una madre parlano. 8. Ecco uno scolare. 9. Uno scolare finisce un libro. 10. Trovate uno schioppo. 11. Perde un libro. 12. Rispondono un bambino e una bambina.

III

1. Here is a little girl. 2. Here are a book and a gun. 3. I finish, you (*pl.*) understand; thou repliest; they lose, he speaks; thou speakest, he understands, we are returning, we understand. 4. The mother speaks to a little boy. 5. They are replying "Good evening!" 6. A pupil is returning to school. 7. I lose a gun. 8. A mother and a little boy are speaking. 9. They are speaking to a pupil. 10. We are returning to school. 11. Are you finishing a book? 12. The little girl finds the footstool.

LESSON II

PRESENT OF *AVERE* AND *ESSERE*64. Present Indicative of *avere* 'have' and *essere* 'be.'

I have, etc.		I am, etc.	
họ	abbiamo	sono	siamo
hai	avete	sei	siate
ha	hanno	è	sono

65. Personal Pronouns, Nominative Forms (cf. 63, a).

io I	noi we
tu thou	voi you
egli, ei, he	èglio, <i>oftener essi</i> , they (<i>m.</i>)
ella she	èlleno, <i>oftener esse</i> , they (<i>f.</i>)
esso, essa, he, she, it	essi, esse, they

a. The third person is the one commonly used in address in Italian, to persons not members of one's family; the singular for one person, the plural for more than one.

Ha finito il libro?	Have you (<i>sg.</i>) finished the book?
Hanno comprato la casa?	Have you (<i>pl.</i>) bought the house?

*1. The pronoun is the feminine **Èlla**, or more familiarly **Lèi** (pl. **Loro**; usually written with capitals), even when a man is addressed. It stands for some feminine noun like **Vossignoria** 'Your Lordship,' formerly used in respectful address.

Lèi è ammalato, Signore?	Are you ill, sir?
--------------------------	-------------------

b. The second singular is used to a member of one's family, to the Deity, to a small child, to a woman house-servant, or to animals. Its plural is **voi**.

*c. The second plural is used to a manservant, a peasant, a cabman, or a porter; but in the south of Italy it is the form in general use except for especial formality.

PRESENT OF *AVERE* AND *ESSERE* §§ 65-66

***d.** The second person, singular or plural, is used by the author to his reader.

e. In these exercises use the third person in address, unless it is indicated that the person spoken to is a small child or a member of the speaker's family.

Buon giorno, Signore! Come sta ?	Good morning, sir. How do you do?
Hai il libro, Giovannino?	Have you the book, Johnny?
Mamma, vieni qua	Mother, come here
Tornano a mezzogiorno, Signori?	Do you return at noon, gentlemen?

f. 'It is' with a personal pronoun ('It is I,' 'It is you,' etc.) is rendered by a form agreeing in person with the pronoun.

È Lei?	Is it you?
Sai tu?	Is it thou?
Siamo noi	It is we
Chi è là? Sono io	Who is there? It is I

66. Omission of the Indefinite Article. The indefinite article is omitted in the predicate after *essere* (and *fare*, *diventare*) before an unmodified noun of rank, profession, or nationality, except in answer to 'Who is he?'

Chi è questa signora?	Who is this lady?
È una contessa	She is a countess
Questa signora è contessa	This lady is a countess
Questo signore è un medico inglese	This gentleman is an English physician

NOTE. For the syntax of the indefinite article, cf. Lesson XXV.

VOCABULARY

un Americano an American (<i>m.</i>)	italiano Italian
un' Americana an American (<i>f.</i>)	americano American
un cognato a brother-in-law	
una cognata a sister-in-law	di of
una contessa a countess	
un fratello a brother	questo this (<i>before masc. noun</i>)
un Italiano an Italian (<i>m.</i>)	questa this (<i>before fem. noun</i>)
un' Italiana an Italian (<i>f.</i>)	
un professore a professor	no no
una signora a lady, a married woman	non not (<i>precedes the verb</i>)
Signora used in address	sì yes
una signorina a young lady, an unmarried woman	chi? who?
Signorina used in address	o (<i>cf. 39</i>) or
un signore a gentleman	amare love
Signore used in address	avere paura (di) be afraid (of)
una sorella a sister	portare carry
uno zio an uncle	preferire prefer
una zia an aunt	temere fear

EXERCISE

I

1. Chi è questo signore? 2. È un professore. 3. Ha una sorella? 4. No, ha un fratello e una cognata. 5. Finisce il libro, Signora? 6. Il bambino ha il padre, la madre, e uno zio. 7. Il bambino e la bambina sono a scuola. 8. Siamo a scuola? 9. No, non siamo a scuola. 10. Il signore e la signora amano il bambino. 11. Tornano a mezzogiorno, Signore? No, non torniamo. 12. La bambina capisce. 13. È Americana, Signorina? 14. No, non sono Americana, sono Italiana. 15. Ecco uno scolare. 16. Chi è? Sono io. 17. Ecco un signore. È professore? Sì, è un professore americano. 18. Tutti parlano a questa bambina. 19. Preferiamo il libro. 20. Non hanno paura.

II

1. Are you an Italian, Madam? 2. No, I am an American.
 3. This little girl is afraid of a gun. 4. Are they at school? 5. No,
 they are not at school. 6. Have you (*pl.*) a brother? 7. No, we
 have a brother-in-law and a sister-in-law. 8. Are you speaking to a
 professor? 9. Yes, I am speaking to a professor. 10. Who is this
 lady? She is an Italian. 11. Is she a countess? 12. Yes, she is
 an Italian countess. 13. Does the professor prefer a gun or a
 book? 14. The lady has an uncle.

LESSON III

PLURAL OF NOUNS

67. Plural of Nouns. *a.* Nouns ending in *o* or *e* in the singular change *o* or *e* to *i* in the plural.

Un ragazzo, due ragazzi	A boy, two boys
Un inglese, dieci inglesi	An Englishman, ten Englishmen
Una lezione, tre lezioni	One lesson, three lessons

b. Feminine nouns ending in *a* in the singular change *a* to *e* in the plural.

Una finestra, nove finestre	A window, nine windows
-----------------------------	------------------------

1. Masculine nouns in *a* take *i* in the plural.

Un socialista, quattro socialisti	A socialist, four socialists
-----------------------------------	------------------------------

NOTE. For full treatment of plural of nouns, see Lesson XXX.

68. Compound Tenses. *a.* The compound tenses of all transitive and some intransitive verbs are formed by means of *avere* (cf. 120). Certain others take *essere* (cf. 96, 98).

b. The past participle of verbs of the first conjugation ends in *-ato*, of the second in *-uto*, and of the third in *-ito*,

these terminations being substituted respectively for the infinitive endings **-are**, **-ere**, and **-ire**.

Ho finito il libro	I have finished the book
Abbiamo visitato la famiglia	We have visited the family
Hanno creduto la storia	They have believed the story
Il padre è tornato	The father has returned

69. Future Indicative of Model Verbs: 'I shall find,' etc.

troverò	troveremo	perderò	perderemo	capirò	capiremo
troverai	troverete	perderai	perderete	capirai	capirete
troverà	troveranno	perderà	perderanno	capirà	capiranno

VOCABULARY

un bicchiere a glass	aiutare help (<i>takes a before infinitive</i>)
un coltello a knife	apparecchiare set table
un cucchiaio (<i>pl. cucchiali</i>) a spoon	consistere (in) consist (of)
una forchetta a fork	distendere (<i>irr. p. abs. and p. p.</i>) spread
una posata knife, fork, and spoon,	mettere (<i>irr. p. abs. and p. p.</i>) put,
a place at table	put on
una tavola a table	prima di before (<i>time</i>)
una tovaglia a tablecloth	domani to-morrow
un uomo (<i>pl. uomini</i>) a man	oggi to-day
ma but	in in, into
due two	su (<i>cf. 39</i>) on
quattro four	

EXERCISE

I

1. La Flora è una buona (*good*) bambina. 2. Aiuterà la mamma ad apparecchiare. 3. Apparecchia prima di mezzogiorno. 4. Domani torneranno due uomini e un bambino. 5. Distende la tovaglia, mette quattro piatti, quattro bicchieri, e quattro posate. 6. Una posata consiste in un coltello, una forchetta, e un cucchiaio. 7. Un

DEFINITE ARTICLE

§§ 70-71.

bambino e una bambina distenderanno la tovaglia. 8. Metterò uno schioppo sur una tavola. 9. Troveremo il libro prima di domani. 10. Bambini, apparecchierete a mezzogiorno.

II

1. One mother, two mothers; a glass, four glasses; a pupil, four pupils. 2. I shall understand, thou wilt put, they will reply, we shall return. 3. They will return to-morrow. 4. We shall set the table before noon. 5. Children, you will lay the cloth. 6. I shall put on four knives, two forks, two glasses, and one spoon. 7. Shall you return before to-morrow, sir? 8. Uncle, shall you bring a gun and a knife? 9. They will return to school and finish the book. 10. Two men are speaking to a pupil. 11. They have set the table, but we have lost two knives. 12. They will help Maria to find the fork.

LESSON IV

DEFINITE ARTICLE

70. The Definite Article. Forms :

MASC. SING.	MASC. PLUR.	FEM. SING.	FEM. PLUR.
il	i	la	le
lo	gli		
l'	{ gli gl'	l'	{ le l'

71. Masculine. a. *Il, i*, are used before masculine nouns beginning with any consonant except *s impure, z*, or *gn*.

Il letto, i letti

The bed, the beds

b. *Lo, gli*, are used before masculine nouns beginning with *s impure, z*, or *gn*.

Lo Spagnuolo, gli Spagnuoli

The Spaniard, the Spaniards

Lo zio, gli zii

The uncle, the uncles

Lo gnocco, gli gnocchi

The dumpling, the dumplings

*1. For **gli** is often substituted **li** before words in which the syllable **gli** occurs.

Lo scoglio, li scogli The reef, the reefs

*2. For **i** is substituted **gli** before the plural of **dio**.

Il dio, gli dei (cf. § 179, c) The god, the gods

c. **L', gli**, are used before masculine nouns beginning with a vowel.

L' autore, gli autori The author, the authors

1. **Gli** becomes **gl'** when the vowel is **i**.

L' imperatore, gl' imperatori The emperor, the emperors

*d. The form **li** often occurs in dates.

Li 8 dicembre The eighth of December

72. **Feminine.** a. **La, le**, are used before feminine nouns beginning with a consonant.

La seggiola, le seggiole The chair, the chairs

La stanza, le stanze The room, the rooms

b. **L', le**, are used before feminine nouns beginning with a vowel.

L' ora, le ore The hour, the hours

1. **Le** becomes **l'** when the vowel is **e** unless the plural is identical with the singular.

L' era, l' ere The era, the eras

L' età, le età The age, the ages

73. **Uses of the Definite Article.** a. The definite article is required, contrary to English usage, before an abstract noun, or a noun taken in a general sense as representative of its class.

La vita è breve Life is short

I cavalli sono intelligenti Horses are intelligent

La pazienza è una virtù Patience is a virtue

La vita dell' ape The life of the bee

b. The definite article is used before the surnames of men ; and familiarly before the given names of women.

L' Ariosto fu un grande scrittore Ariosto was a great author
La Pietrina chiama **la** Signora B. Pietrina is calling Mrs. B.

NOTE. For the syntax of the definite article, see Lesson XXII.

74. Past Absolute Indicative of Model Verbs : 'I found,' etc.

trovai	trovammo	perdei	perdemmo	capii	capimmo
trovasti	trovaste	perdesti	perdeste	capisti	capiste
trovò	trovârôno	perdè	perdêrono	capì	capirono

VOCABULARY

l' amico (<i>m.</i>) friend	l' occasione (<i>f.</i>) opportunity
l' avvocato (<i>m.</i>) lawyer	la pazienza patience
la battaglia battle	la salute health
la bellezza beauty	la scommessa wager
la bussola compass, bearings	il sonno sleep
il cervello brain, mind	lo speculatore speculator
il colmo summit	la sventura misfortune
il coraggio courage	il tempo time
il denaro money	il tiranno tyrant
la forza force	la vita life
il generale general	ieri yesterday
la gioventù youth	finalmente finally
la gloria glory	stamane this morning
l' imprudente (<i>m.</i>) imprudent man	per for; <i>with infinitive</i> in order to
l' ingrato (<i>m.</i>) ingrate	tre three
la lite lawsuit	cinque five
la memoria memory	tutto all, everything
il mondo world	

EXERCISE**I. READING LESSON**

L' uomo perde tutto in questo mondo : perde la bellezza, la gioventù, le forze, gli amici, la pazienza, il tempo, il coraggio, la gloria, l' occasione, la bussola, le scommesse, il cervello, e finalmente, per colmo di sventura, perde la vita. Gl' imprudenti perdono la salute, gli avvocati perdono le liti, i generali perdono le battaglie, i tiranni perdono il sonno, gl' ingrati la memoria e gli speculatori il denaro.

II

1. Lo speculatore perde la scommessa. 2. Il generale, per colmo di sventura, perde l' occasione. 3. Apparecchieranno, tornarono ; consiste, distendesti, finiste, capì ; tememmo, risponderemo ; aiutò, parlano, portai, aiuterò, parlerai, temerono. 4. L' avvocato parlò ad un amico. 5. Gli scolari finirono il libro. 6. I generali perdettero la battaglia.

III

1. Did you understand the lesson yesterday, children? 2. The men lost the gun, and returned. 3. Speculators lose sleep. 4. Did you return yesterday, sir? 5. The lawyers will lose the case. 6. We have the opportunities in this world, but we lose time. 7. The pupil carried the books to school. 8. We laid the cloth and helped our mother [*la mamma*]. 9. The imprudent (men) talked to a speculator. 10. Thou returnest, he spoke, we finished ; I shall put, they carried, he will aid ; thou spokest, you returned, they feared, I found ; we are afraid.

CONTRACTION OF ARTICLE

	il	i	lo	gli	la	le	l'
a to, at	al	ai <i>or a'</i>	allo	agli	alla	alle	all'
con with	col	col <i>or co'</i>	collo	cogli	colla	colle	coll'
da by, from	dal	dai <i>or da'</i>	dallo	dagli	dalla	dalle	dall'
di of	del	dell <i>or de'</i>	dello	degli	della	delle	dell'
in in, into	nel	nei <i>or ne'</i>	nello	negli	nella	nelle	nell'
per for	pel	pel <i>or pe'</i>	per lo	per gli	per la	per le	per l'
su on	sul	sui <i>or su'</i>	sullo	sugli	sulla	sulle	sull'

Parlò allo Spagnuolo e al Francese He spoke to the Spaniard and the Frenchman

Ho dei pane	I have bread, I have some bread
Ci sono dei libri sullo scaffale	There are books on the shelf

Nón họ pane	I have no bread, I haven't any bread
Nón họ del pane bianco	I have no white bread

b. And in enumerations.

Garibaldi non offrì ai suoi soldati	Garibaldi offered his soldiers nothing
che fame, sete, marce forzate,	but hunger, thirst, forced
battaglie e morte	marches, battles, and death

78. The Possessive. The possessive in Italian is always expressed by *di* before a noun.

La casa di mio padre	My father's house
L'orologio di Giovanni	John's watch
Ecco un quaderno; è dello scolare?	Here is an exercise book; is it the pupil's?

79. Past Future ('should,' 'would') of Model Verbs.

troverei	troveremmo	perderei	perderemmo
troveresti	trovereste	perderesti	perdereste
troverebbe	troverebbero	perderebbe	perderebbero
	capierei	capiremmo	
	capiresti	capireste	
	capirebbe	capirebbero	

VOCABULARY

l'acqua (<i>f.</i>) water	annaffiare water
il fiore flower	appassire wither
il giardino garden	fiore bloom
la mattina morning	alzare raise
il mugghetto lily-of-the-valley	scendere (<i>p. abs. and p.p. irr.</i>) descend, go down
la pianta plant, tree	alle sei at six o'clock
la rosa rose	ci sono there are
lo scaffale shelf	senza without
la tazza cup	sette seven
bello beautiful	si (<i>third person refl.</i>) himself, herself, itself, themselves
fiorito in bloom	si alza (<i>refl. use of alzare</i>) rises
molto much, very	
ogni every	

EXERCISE**I. READING LESSON**

La Luigina ha un bel giardino tutto fiorito. Nel giardino ci sono rose e mughetti. La Luigina ama molto i fiori. Ogni mattina si alza alle sei, scende nel giardino e annaffia le piante. Le piante appassirebbero senz' acqua.

II

1. Il padre della bambina aiutò la famiglia dello zio. 2. Metterei i coltelli colle forchette sulla tavola. 3. Ci sono dei fiori nel giardino dell' amico? 4. Portano dei libri dalla scuola. 5. Non troveremmo il libro sullo scaffale? 6. I bambini non apparecchierebbero senza la mamma.

III

1. Are there some roses on the table? 2. There are roses and lilies-of-the-valley in the garden. 3. Would the plants bloom without water? No, they would wither. 4. The little boys carried a gun from the table to the shelf. 5. By the men, to the pupils, for the little boys, for the mother, of the books, with the friend, on the footstool, in the cup. 6. Would you speak to the speculator and the lawyer? 7. We should not put the flowers with the books. 8. The uncles would go down into the lawyer's garden. 9. The pupils' mother will lay the cloth. 10. They will put the table in the garden.

LESSON VI

GENDER OF NOUNS

80. Gender of Nouns. *a.* Names of males are masculine; names of females are feminine.

Il nonno
La donna

The grandfather
The woman

1. EXCEPTIONS: **guida** 'guide,' **guàrdia** 'guard,' 'policeman,' **persona** 'person,' **recluta** 'recruit,' **sentinella** 'sentinel,' **spia** 'spy,' and **vedetta** 'sentinel,' which are feminine, although usually referring to men.

b. Names of objects without sex are either masculine or feminine, there being no neuter in Italian.

1. Nouns ending in **a** are feminine.

La lāmpada

The lamp

EXCEPTIONS: **duca** 'duke,' **monarca** 'monarch,' **poeta** 'poet,' and other words listed under Lesson XXXIV; and words ending in **-ista**, like **artista** 'artist' and **pianista** 'pianist,' when referring to men.

2. Nouns ending in **-giōne**, **-ziōne**, and **-tūdine** are feminine.

la ragiōne reason

la solitūdine solitude

la conversaziōne conversation

3. Nouns ending in **o** are masculine.

il ginōcchio knee

EXCEPTIONS: **l'eco** (of common gender) 'echo,' and **la mano** 'hand.'

4. Nouns ending in **u** are feminine.

la virtù virtue

EXCEPTIONS: a few foreign words, like *il bambù* 'bamboo'; and some other parts of speech used substantively, as *il più* 'the most,' *per lo più* 'for the most part.'

NOTE. For further treatment of the gender of nouns, see Lesson XXXIV.

81. Four Tenses of *essere* 'be.'

PRESENT INDICATIVE

sono I am
sei thou art
è he, she, it is
siamo we are
siate you are
sono they are

PAST FUTURE

sarei I should be
saresti thou wouldst be
sarebbe he *etc.* would be
saremmo we should be
sareste you would be
sarebbero they would be

FUTURE INDICATIVE

sarò I shall be
sarai thou wilt be
sarà he, she, it will be
saremo we shall be
sarete you will be
saranno they will be

PAST ABSOLUTE

fui I was
festi thou wast
fu he *etc.* was
fummo we were
foste you were
furono they were

VOCABULARY

la casa house
a casa home, homeward
il duca duke (*pl. duchi*)
la festa festival
la fine end
la guida guide
la lezione lesson
la mano hand
il monarca monarch
la persona person
il poeta poet
la porta door

la sentinella sentinel
la settimana week
la vacanza vacation
la vedetta scout
la volontà will, willingness
battere beat, clap
bisognare (*impers.*) be necessary
cominciare begin (*takes a before infin.*)
continuare continue
imparare learn
avrò I shall have

anche also, even	quel che what, that which
bene well	otto eight
che who, which (<i>rel.</i>)	dieci ten
come how, as	starò (<i>from stare, irr.</i>) I shall be
quanti, -e how many?	voglio (<i>from volere, irr.</i>) I wish
andremo we shall go	non è necessario it is not necessary

EXERCISE

I. READING LESSON

Il bambino dice :

Lunedì. — Voglio cominciare bene la settimana ; starò attento alle lezioni, e sarò buono.

Martedì. — Bisogna continuare quel che abbiamo ben cominciato. Anche oggi sarò buono.

Mercoledì. — Come sono contento ! Domani è giovedì, e avrò vacanza !

Giovedì. — Abbiamo vacanza ! Battiamo le mani !

Venerdì. — Oggi tornerò a scuola con molta volontà.

Sabato. — È la fine della settimana.

Domenica. — La domenica è giorno di festa !

II

1. Quanti giorni ci sono nella settimana ? 2. Nella settimana ci sono sette giorni. 3. Domani è lunedì ; bisognerà tornare a scuola. 4. Chi sono arrivati lunedì ? Un poeta e una sentinella. 5. I bambini imparerebbero le lezioni. 6. Saremo, sarebbero, siete, fui, sono, siamo, saranno. 7. Abbiamo vacanza il giovedì. 8. Cominciò a imparare le lezioni.

III

1. To-morrow is Friday, and I shall learn the four lessons. 2. He would be at the door of the school at noon. 3. We shall go to school Monday, but at the end of the week we shall return home. 4. It is necessary to set the table before noon, and the

children will put on the cups with the glasses. 5. How many cups are there on the shelf? 6. Dante was an Italian poet. 7. Who are the men in the garden? They are a guide and a scout; they are speaking to the duke. 8. The children will clap their (the) hands at the end of the week. 9. The lady's flowers are in the glass; I shall put some water in the glass. 10. On Sunday it is not necessary to learn lessons.

LESSON VII

ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS

82. Most adjectives end in either *o* or *e*, masc. sing.

a. Adjectives in *o* have the forms of the nouns in *o* and *a*: *rosso, rossi, rossa, rosse*, 'red.'

Il libro rosso
Le rose rosse

The red book
The red roses

b. Adjectives in *e* take *i* in the plural, but do not change for gender.

La camera grande , le camere grandi	The large room, the large rooms
Un contadino sēmplice , dei contadini sēmplici	A simple peasant, simple peasants

83. Agreement of Adjectives. *a.* An adjective agrees with its noun in gender and number.

Il cappello nero

The black hat

Le piccole mani

The small hands

La rosa e la māmolla belle

The beautiful rose and violet

**b.* An adjective modifying two or more nouns of different gender is either masculine plural or in agreement with the noun nearest it.

Prati e selve vastissime

Very vast meadows and woods

1. But when referring to persons it must be in the masculine plural.

I signori e le signore sono partiti	The gentlemen and ladies are gone
-------------------------------------	-----------------------------------

*c. A plural noun may take two or more adjectives in the singular instead of being repeated in the singular before each adjective.

I governi inglese e tedesco	The English and German governments
-----------------------------	------------------------------------

84. Position of Adjectives. a. Most adjectives of size or quantity, numerals and pronominal adjectives, and usually *bello, buono, solo, ultimo, and unico*, precede the noun.

Una piccola scatola	A small box
Ho poco denaro	I have little money
Il primo capitolo	The first chapter
Quegli uomini sono francesi	Those men are French

1. Numerals may follow when emphatic.

Lire 20	20 lire
---------	---------

b. Adjectives of shape, color, nationality, and descriptive qualities generally, participles used as adjectives, adjectives longer than their nouns, and adjectives modified by an adverb or a suffix, usually follow.

La stampa inglese	The English press
Il vestito celeste	The blue dress
La cioccolata svizzera	Swiss chocolate
La notte oscura	The dark night
Il risultato voluto	The desired result
Una persona rispettabile	A respectable person
Una bella signora, una signora più bella, una signorina bellina	A beautiful lady, a more beautiful lady, a pretty young lady

1. Adjectives of characteristic may precede, when the characteristic is peculiarly intimate or usual.

La bianca neve

The white snow

*c. When two or more adjectives modify the same noun, either both follow, or one precedes and the other follows, the less emphatic preceding.

Un palazzo antico e bello	} A beautiful ancient palace
Un bel palazzo antico	

*d. Some adjectives have a different meaning according as they precede or follow their noun. The unusual position often indicates the literal, and the usual position a more metaphorical, meaning.

Un uomo grande

A large man

Un grand' uomo

A great man

Una cara figlia

A dear daughter

Una collana cara

A costly necklace

La chiesa di santo Stéfano

The church of St. Stephen

E un uomo santo

He is a saintly man

*e. The adjective may also be placed in the unusual position for emphasis.

85. Some Irregular Adjectives. a. The adjectives buono 'good,' bello 'beautiful,' santo 'saint,' 'saintly,' and grande 'large,' vary in the masculine on the same principle as do the articles. The forms are —

1. Before any consonant except *s* *impure*, sg. buon, bel, san, gran; pl. buoni, bei, santi, grandi. (Gran may also be used in the feminine singular and the masculine plural.)

Un buon soldato

A good soldier

Un bel cavallo, dei bei cavalli

A handsome horse, handsome horses

San Pàolo

Saint Paul

Una gran sala

A large hall

2. Before a vowel, sg. (m. and f.) **buon, bell', sant', grand'**; pl. (m.) **buoni, begli, santi, grandi**.

Un buon amico	A good friend
Un bell' uomo	A handsome man
Sant' Agostino	Saint Augustine
Begli uccelli	Beautiful birds
La bell' aria	The beautiful aria

3. Before *s impure*, in the predicate, or when placed after their noun, the full forms: sg. **buono, bello, santo, grande**; pl. **buoni, belli, santi, grandi**; **begli** with *s impure*.

Buon pane	Good bread
Questo pane è buono	This bread is good
Un bello spettacolo	A fine spectacle
Santo Stēfano	Saint Stephen
I buoni stivali	Good boots
Begli uomini	Handsome men
Gli uomini sono belli	The men are handsome

b. The following adjectives are invariable: **fu** 'the late,' 'formerly,' **pari** 'equal,' 'even,' **impari** 'unequal,' 'odd,' **più** 'many,' 'most,' and **ogni** 'every' (with no plural).

La fu Signora Bianchi	The late Mrs. White
Il número pari	The even number
I nūmeri impari	Uneven numbers
Sono andato più volte a Parigi	I have been to Paris several times
Il pane di ogni giorno	Daily bread

86. The Demonstrative Adjective. (Cf. 190.)

a. **Questo** 'this.'

SINGULAR	PLURAL
questo, quest' (<i>m.</i>)	questi (<i>m.</i>)
questa (<i>f.</i>)	queste (<i>f.</i>)

b. Quello 'that.'

SINGULAR	PLURAL
quel, quello, quell' (<i>m.</i>)	quei, quelli, quegli
quella, quell' (<i>f.</i>)	quelle

1. **Quello** is inflected like **bello**. (Cf. 85, a.)

87. The Interrogative Adjective. (Cf. 191.)

a. **Quanto, quanta?** 'how much?'

Quanti, quante? 'how many?'

b. **Quale, quali?** 'which, which one?' 'which ones?'

c. **Che?** 'what?'

88. Any adjective may be used substantively.

Il povero

The poor man

a. Proper adjectives are not capitalized unless used substantively, and not invariably even then.

La lingua **francese**

The French language

Ecco due **Inglese** (*inglesi*)

There are two Englishmen

*b. The substantive is understood after the adjective in a good many familiar phrases.

Per la più **breve** (*strada*)

By the shortest route

Al **destra** (*mano*)

To the right

A **vera** (*sorte*) **peggio**

To have a worse lot

Nel (*territorio*) **fiorentino**

In the Florentine territory

Al **buona** (*maniera*)

Familiarly, in everyday fashion

Al **maniera** (*francese*)

In the French mode

89. Adverbs. (See Lesson XXXVI.)

a. Adverbs are most commonly formed by adding **-mente** to the feminine form of the adjective.

Sincero, sinceramente

Sincere, sincerely

Prudente, prudentemente

Prudent, prudently

LESSON VIII

THE REGULAR VERBS

90. *a.* There are three regular conjugations, the first ending in **-are** in the infinitive, the second in **-ere** or **'-ere**, and the third in **-ire**.

b. Table of Regular Verbs.

INFINITIVE

trov-are 'find'	cred-ere 'believe, think'	cap-ire 'understand'
-----------------	---------------------------	----------------------

PRESENT PARTICIPLE

trov-ando	cred-endo	cap-endo
-----------	-----------	----------

PAST PARTICIPLE

trov-ato, -a, -i, -e	cred-uto, -a, -i, -e	cap-ito, -a, -i, -e
----------------------	----------------------	---------------------

INDICATIVE

PRESENT

I find, I am finding, *etc.*

trov-o	trov-iamo	cred-o	cred-iamo	cap-isco	cap-iamo
trov-i	trov-ate	cred-i	cred-ete	cap-isci	cap-ite
trov-a	trov-ano	cred-e	cred-ono	cap-isce	cap-iscono

PAST DESCRIPTIVE

I found, was finding, used to find, *etc.*

trov-avo, -ava	trov-avamo	cred-evo, -eva, -ea	cred-evamo
trov-avi	trov-avate	cred-evi	cred-evate
trov-ava	trov-avano	cred-eva, -ea	cred-evano, -evano
	cap-ivo, -iva, -ia	cap-ivamo	
	cap-ivi	cap-ivate	
	cap-iva, -ia	cap-ivano	

THE REGULAR VERBS

§ 90

PAST ABSOLUTE

I found, did find, *etc.*

trov-ai	trov-ammo	cred-ēi, -etti	cred-emma
trov-asti	trov-aste	cred-esti	cred-este
trov-ò	trov-arono	cred-è, -ette	cred-erono, -ettero
	cap-ii	cap-immo	
	cap-isti	cap-iste	
	cap-l	cap-irono	

FUTURE

I shall find, *etc.*

trov-er-ò	trov-er-emo	cred-er-ò	cred-er-emo
trov-er-ai	trov-er-ete	cred-er-ai	cred-er-ete
trov-er-à	trov-er-anno	cred-er-à	cred-er-anno
	cap-ir-ò	cap-ir-emo	
	cap-ir-ai	cap-ir-ete	
	cap-ir-à	cap-ir-anno	

PAST FUTURE

I should find, *etc.*

trover-ēi	trover-emma	creder-ēi	creder-emma
trover-esti	trover-este	creder-esti	creder-este
trover-ebbero	trover-ebbero	creder-ebbero	creder-ebbero
	capir-ēi	capir-emma	
	capir-esti	capir-este	
	capir-ebbero	capir-ebbero	

IMPERATIVE

Find, let him find, let us find, *etc.*

trov-a	trov-iamo	cred-i	cred-iamo	cap-isci	cap-iamo
trov-i	trov-ate	cred-a	cred-ete	cap-isca	cap-ite
	trov-ino		cred-ano		cap-iscano

SUBJUNCTIVE

(Variously rendered, according to sense)

PRESENT

trōv-i	trov-iamo	crēd-a	cred-iamo	cap-isca	cap-iamo
trōv-i	trov-iate	crēd-a	cred-iate	cap-isca	cap-iate
trōv-i	trōv-ino	crēd-a	crēd-ano	cap-isca	cap-iscano

PAST

trov-assi	trov-ässimo	cred-ēssi	cred-ēssimo	cap-issi	cap-issimo
trov-assi	trov-aste	cred-ēssi	cred-ēste	cap-issi	cap-iste
trov-asse	trov-ässero	cred-ēsse	cred-ēssero	cap-isce	cap-issero

91. Formation of Regular Verbs. Italian regular verbs have three principal parts: the infinitive, and the present and past participles. These all have the same stem.

a. All simple tenses except future and past future are formed by dropping **-are**, **-ire**, or **-ere** from the infinitive, and adding the personal endings. For compound tenses, cf. **96, 120**.

b. The future and past future are formed by dropping merely the final **e** of the infinitive, and adding the terminations; verbs of the first conjugation first change the **a** of **-are** to **e**.

c. Verbs of the third conjugation may be said to have a second stem in their inchoative form in **-isco**, from which are formed the singular and third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive, and the singular imperative.

92. Imperative. *a.* The third persons of the imperative, it will be seen, are filled in from the subjunctive.

Finisca il lavoro	Let him finish the work
Tōrnino a mezzogiorno	Let them return at noon
Crēda quello che dico, Signore	Believe what I say, sir

b. The negative of the second person singular of the imperative is formed with the infinitive.

Non aver paura, Chiarina	Do not be afraid, little Clara
Non apparecchiare ancora, Peppina	Do not set the table yet, Josephine

93. Past Subjunctive. a. The past subjunctive is used in a condition of which the conclusion is in the past future.

Se mi mandasse il danaro, com- prerei questa casa	If he should send (sent) me the money, I should buy this house
---	--

VOCABULARY

l'anno (<i>m.</i>) year	azzurro blue
l'autunno (<i>m.</i>) autumn	caldo hot
il calore heat	corto short
il colore color	freddo cold
l'estate (<i>f.</i>) summer	primo first
il garofano carnation	ultimo last
la giornata day, period of one day	verde green
il lavoro work, task	nove nine
il mese month	dodici twelve
il Natale Christmas	quale, -i which? which one?
la neve snow	cantare sing
il nido nest	diminuire lessen
la primavera spring	fa caldo it is hot (weather)
la stagione season	fa freddo it is cold (weather)
la terra earth	si chiudono <i>refl. use of chiudere</i> (<i>irr.</i>) close
la tristezza sadness	si riaprono <i>refl. use of riaprire (irr.)</i> reopen
l'uccello (<i>m.</i>) bird	si tinge <i>refl. use of tingere (irr.)</i> color
la vendemmia vintage	
più more, most	
se if	

EXERCISE

I. READING LESSON

I MESI DELL' ANNO

Gennaio. — È il primo mese. Neve, freddo, e giornate corte.

Febbraio. — È il mese più corto dell' anno.

Marzo. — Comincia la primavera. L' uccello torna al vecchio nido.

Aprile. — La terra si tinge di verde, il cielo d' azzurro.

Maggio. — È il mese delle rose e dei garofani. Che festa di colori!

Giugno. — Finisce l' anno scolastico.

Luglio. — È estate. Si chiudono le scuole.

Agosto. — Fa molto caldo.

Settembre. — Il calore dell' estate diminuisce. Comincia la vendemmia e l' autunno.

Ottobre. — La sera e la mattina fa fresco. Si riaprono le scuole.

Novembre. — Questo è il mese della tristezza.

Dicembre. — È l' ultimo mese dell' anno, e siamo all' inverno. Ecco il freddo, ma anche la più bella delle feste: il Natale!

II

1. Quanti mesi ci sono nell' anno? 2. Fa freddo di gennaio, ma il freddo diminuisce di marzo. 3. È primavera; gli uccelli cominciano a cantare nel giardino. 4. Le nevi d' inverno sono molto fredde. 5. Qual è la stagione calda? Fa sempre caldo d' estate. 6. Nella primavera cantano gli uccelli. 7. Cantino, Signorine, questa sera. 8. Se gli uccelli non temessero il freddo, tornerebbero più presto al nido. 9. Tornate a mezzogiorno, bambini. 10. Se il freddo diminuisse, la primavera tornerebbe. 11. Luisina, porta i piatti sulla tavola. 12. Se finissimo il lavoro prima di mezzogiorno, torneremmo a casa. 13. Se farà troppo caldo non torneremo.

III

1. There are twelve months in the year. 2. December, January, and February are the months of winter. What are the months of summer? 3. Which is the cold season? It is always cold in winter. 4. If the men should speak, would he reply? 5. Let us return home. 6. If the birds returned to the old nest, they would sing. 7. It is always very hot in August, but the heat grows less in September. 8. Do not fear the heat of summer. 9. Speak to that sentinel, sir. 10. If the cold should diminish, we should return in March. 11. If we spoke to the Italians, they would reply in Italian. 12. Little girl, do not be afraid of that gun. 13. Look, madam. 14. Go down into the garden, miss. 15. How many seasons are there in the year? 16. Reply in Italian, young ladies. 17. It is November; the days begin to be short.

LESSON IX

CONJUNCTIVE PRONOUNS

94. *a.* Accusative, Direct Object.

mi me	ci us
ti thee	vi you
lò him	li them (<i>m.</i>)
la her	le them (<i>f.</i>)
nè some, any, of it, of them (<i>cf.</i> 124)	

*1. Instead of **ci** is often found, especially in poetry and older writings, the form **nè**; and sometimes **il** for **lò**.

b. Dative, Indirect Object.

mi to me, for me	ci to us, for us
ti to thee, for thee	vi to you, for you
gli to him, for him	
le to her, for her	loro to them, for them (<i>m. or f.</i>)

c. Reflexive Object, Direct or Indirect.

mi myself, to <i>or</i> for myself	ci ourselves, <i>etc.</i>
ti thyself, to <i>or</i> for thyself	vi yourselves, <i>etc.</i>
si himself, herself, <i>etc.</i>	si themselves, <i>etc.</i> (<i>m. or f.</i>)

95. Rules of Syntax. *a.* These pronouns are called conjunctive, because conjoined to the verb in the relation of object. The object pronoun, whether direct, indirect, or reflexive, immediately precedes the governing finite verb (except **loro**, which always follows). If the verb is compound, the conjunctive (except **loro**) precedes the auxiliary; **loro** follows the participle.

Lø fa	He does it
Nø parla	He speaks of it
Ci alziamo	We get up
Mi ha detto la verità	He has told me the truth
Lø danno un mazzolino di fiori	They give her a bunch of flowers
Parliamo loro	We speak to them, let us speak to them
Abbiamo dato loro un quadro	We have given them a picture

*1. In literary usage **loro** will sometimes be found preceding the verb.

b. But if the governing verb be an infinitive, a positive imperative of the first or second person, a present participle, or a past participle used without auxiliary, then the conjunctive pronoun (except **loro**) becomes enclitic, being appended to the verb-form so as to make one word with it. **Loro** is never appended. The enclitic makes no change in the accent of the verb-form.

Viene a trovarlo	He comes to see him
Abbiamo fatto il possibile di trovarli	We have tried our best to find them

Vuol dir loro che sono arrivate delle lettere	He wishes to tell them that some letters have come
Avendolo	Having it
Avendolo detto	Having said it
Dettogli questo	This being said to him
Il dispaccio comunicatoci dal cōn- sole afferma che la guerra è stata dichiarata	The telegram communicated to us by the consul states that war has been declared
Lo punirono per averne parlato	They punished him for having spoken of it

1. *With the imperative:*

	troviāmolo		non lo perdiamo
trōvalo	trovātelo	non lo pērdere	non lo perdēte
lo trōvi	lo trōvino	non lo pērda	non lo pērdano

2. The *e* is dropped from the infinitive before an enclitic pronoun (cf. 31, a).

Andiamo a trovarla	Let us go and see her
--------------------	-----------------------

VOCABULARY

/// bagnato wet	comprare buy
il burro butter	desiderare wish, desire
la campagna the country	favorire favor with, kindly give
la lettera letter	piacere (<i>irr.</i>) please, be pleasing to; <i>mi piace</i> I like (<i>used w. dat.</i>)
l' ombrello <i>m.</i> umbrella	per piacere if you please
l' orologio <i>m.</i> watch	/// riavere get back, recover
il pane bread	dica 3 <i>sg. pres. subj. and imper.</i> of dire (<i>irr.</i>) say, tell (<i>takes di</i> <i>before inf.</i>)
il postino postman	vuole 3 <i>sg. pres. ind. of volere</i> (<i>irr.</i>) will, wish
la strada street	dia 3 <i>sg. pres. subj. and imper.</i> of dare (<i>irr.</i>) give
grāzie (<i>f. pl.</i>) thanks	sūbito at once
qua here	
fatto done, made; <i>p. part. of fare</i> (<i>irr.</i>)	
aver fretta be in a hurry	
la seggiola chair	

EXERCISE

I

1. Le piace la campagna, Signorina? Mi piace tanto. 2. Hai perduto l' orologio? Sì, l' ho perduto. 3. Dov' è il denaro? L' abbiamo perduto; abbiamo fatto di tutto per riaverlo. 4. Le lettere portatemi dal postino erano della famiglia. 5. Parlandole per la strada, capimmo che aveva fretta. 6. Guarda, Beppino, l' ombrello è bagnato; non lo portare qua. 7. Mi favorisca il pane, Signora. Grazie. 8. Ecco un bell' orologio; bisogna comprarlo per Giuseppe. 9. Lo dia a Giovanni, e gli dica di portarlo a Giuseppe. 10. Vediamo degl' Italiani. 11. Le dice che abbiamo perduto il denaro, ma non lo creda. 12. Ne abbiamo dato a Gigi.

II

1. Is this John's book? 2. Carry it to John, Chiarina; don't put it on the shelf. 3. Have you lost the money? Yes, I have lost it. 4. Do you wish to find it? I will help you. 5. Yes, help me to find it, please. 6. I spoke to him. She spoke to us. We spoke to them. 7. Please pass me the butter. Thank you. 8. Tell them to return before noon. 9. Put the chairs near the table; do not put them in front of the door. 10. Give us the flowers, please; do not give them to Maria. 11. Has he the money? No, carrying it home he lost it. 12. It is very hot to-day; I do not like the heat. 13. Buy some at once. 14. Don't speak of it, child.

LESSON X

THE VERB ESSERE

96. The Verb *Essere*, 'be.'

INFINITIVE	PRESENT PARTICIPLE	PAST PARTICIPLE
ēssere	essēdo	stato
ēssere stato		essēdo stato

INDICATIVE

PRESENT		PAST DESCRIPTIVE	PAST ABSOLUTE		FUTURE	
sono	siamo	ero, -a	eravamo	fui	fummo	sarò saremo
sei	siete	eri	eravate	fosti	foste	sarai sarete
è	sono	era	erano	fu	furono	sarà saranno

PRESENT PERFECT	PAST PERFECT	SECOND PAST PERFECT	FUTURE PERFECT
sono stato, -a, etc.	ero stato, etc.	fui stato, etc.	sarò stato, etc.

PAST FUTURE		PAST FUTURE PERFECT
sarei	saremmo	sarei stato, etc.
saresti	saresteste	saremmo stati, -e, etc.
sarebbe	sarebbero	

IMPERATIVE

	siamo
sii	siate
sia	siano

SUBJUNCTIVE

PRESENT		PAST	
sia	siamo	fossi	fossimo
sia	siate	fossi	foste
sia	siano	fosse	fossero
PRESENT PERFECT		PAST PERFECT	
sia stato, etc.		fossi stato, etc.	

97. The Passive Voice. *a.* The passive voice is constructed by means of the auxiliary *essere* and the past participle of the verb conjugated. It is used chiefly when the agent is expressed; otherwise the reflexive best translates the English passive. (See Lesson XII.)

L' Amērica è **stata scoperta** da America was discovered by Christopher Columbus
Cristōforo Colombo

*1. The passive may be constructed with the verbs *andare* 'go,' *venire* 'come,' *rimanere* 'remain,' but with reference rather to the state resultant from the action than to the action itself (cf. 129, 138, 149).

Va fatto così	It should be done this way
Prima chē la frugale colazione	Before the frugal luncheon was
venisse imbandita, il lavoro fu	served, the work was done
terminato	
Ne rimase stupefatto	He was amazed at it

b. Model Passive Verb.

PRESENT		INFINITIVE	PERFECT
essere lodato, to be praised		essere stato lodato, to have been praised	
PARTICIPLE			
essendo lodato, being praised		essendo stato lodato, having been praised	
PRESENT		INDICATIVE	PAST DESCRIPTIVE
sono lodato, I am praised, etc.		ero lodato, I was being praised, etc.	
FUTURE		PAST ABSOLUTE	
sarò lodato, I shall be praised, etc.		fui lodato, I was praised, etc.	
PRESENT PERFECT		FUTURE PERFECT	
sono stato lodato, etc.		sarò stato lodato, etc.	

ESSERE AND THE PASSIVE

§§ 97-99

PAST PERFECT
ero stato lodato, *etc.*

SECOND PAST PERFECT
fui stato lodato, *etc.*

PAST FUTURE
sarèi lodato, *etc.*

PAST FUTURE PERFECT
sarèi stato lodato, *etc.*

IMPERATIVE
sii lodato, *etc.*

PRESENT
sia lodato, *etc.*

SUBJUNCTIVE

PAST
fossi lodato, *etc.*

PRESENT PERFECT
sia stato lodato, *etc.*

PAST PERFECT
fossi stato lodato, *etc.*

98. All passive, reflexive, and impersonal verbs (except fare used impersonally) are conjugated with *essere* (cf. 101).

I Cristiani primitivi fũrono perseguitati dai Romani
S' è alzato alle sette
È piovuto

The early Christians were persecuted by the Romans
He rose at seven
It has rained

99. After the auxiliary *essere*, the past participle agrees with the subject, except with reflexives (cf. 104, c, 1; 194, b).

Molte battaglie fũrono vinte dai Tedeschi
Sono venuti quei signori?

Many battles were won by the Germans
Have those gentlemen come?

VOCABULARY

la bandiera flag
la guerra war
il p  polo people
il sangue blood
il soldato soldier
lo stato state
la volta time, a time

arrivare arrive
comb  ttere fight
difendere (*irr.*) defend
dividere (*irr.*) divide
innalzare raise
insegnare teach (*insegno*)
morire (*irr.*) die

mostrare	show	circa	about
spargere (<i>irr.</i>)	scatter	disse 3 <i>sg. p. abs. of dire (irr.)</i>	say
venire (<i>irr., p. p. venuto</i>)	come	dobbiamo 1 <i>pl. pres. ind. of</i>	
bianco (<i>pl. bianchi, bianche</i>)	white	dovere (<i>irr.</i>)	must
caro	dear	la nostra	our
felice	happy	or sono	ago
il proprio	own, one's own	quando	when
rosso	red	stesso	itself <i>etc. (not refl.)</i> , same
tutto	all	subito	immediately
ancora	yet, still	vogliamo 1 <i>pl. pres. ind. of volere</i>	
cento	hundred, a hundred	(<i>irr.</i>)	wish, will
chi?	who?		

EXERCISE

I

LA BANDIERA NAZIONALE

La nostra bandiera nazionale è di tre colori: bianco, rosso, verde.

Essa è il simbolo della patria, e noi dobbiamo amarla come la patria stessa. Il soldato per essa combatte, ed è felice di spargere il proprio sangue e di morire per difenderla.

La nostra bella bandiera tricolore fu innalzata la prima volta dai soldati piemontesi, circa cento anni or sono, quando l'Italia, la nostra cara patria, non era ancora tutta unita e libera.

E il popolo subito l'amò, e disse che era la più bella di tutte; e la cantò così:

La bandiera a tre colori
sempre è stata la più bella;
noi vogliamo sempre quella,
noi vogliam la libertà!

II

1. The national flag of the United States is of three colors: red, white, and blue. 2. The soldiers have come, carrying the flag of the state. 3. Carrying it always, they will have returned to the

war. 4. The tricolored flag was carried by the Italians in the war for [of] Independence. 5. Soldiers love their own country; they are glad to die to defend it. 6. The soldier has found the gun, but he has not yet returned. 7. Do you like the tricolored American flag? Yes, I like it.

LESSON XI

CONJUNCTIVES (CONTINUED)

100. *a.* **Ecco** takes the pronouns appended in the same manner as certain parts of the verb (cf. 95, *b*).

Dov' è la mia borsa? Eccola	Where is my bag? Here it is
Eccone	Here is some, here are some
Eccoci	Here we are

b. All conjunctive pronouns except **gli** and **glię** double their initial consonant when appended to a verb-form which ends in an accented vowel (cf. 5, *b*, 2; 125, *b*, 2).

Dammi del latte	Give me some milk
Fallo subito	Do it at once
Stacci attento	Pay attention to it

*1. The following types are confined to poetic or literary use:

Parlòmmi, <i>for</i> Mi parlò	He spoke to me
Porterallo, <i>for</i> Lo porterà	He will bring it to us
Guardòcci, <i>for</i> Ci guardò	He looked at us

c. **La** and **Lę** are the accusative and dative cases, respectively, of **Lęi** in direct address (cf. 65, *a*), and are used to persons of either sex (but **Li**, **Le**, accusative plural, according to sex).

A rivederla, Signore	Good-by, sir
Come Lę piace questo dolce, Signore?	How do you like this dessert, sir?
A rivederli, Signori	Good-by, gentlemen

d. When a noun object, or an object clause, precedes the verb, it must be repeated in pronoun form, as a conjunctive object.

La carne non l' ho comprata The meat I haven't bought

*1. Sometimes in conversation, for vivacity or emphasis, the order is reversed, a conjunctive pronoun preceding the verb redundantly.

L' ha visto il Duomo? Have you seen the Cathedral?

*2. The dative is often used as the so-called dative of reference or concern.

M' era morta di poco la mamma My mother had died a short time before

*e. In the predicate after 'to be,' 'so' is expressed by *lo*, used even where it would be redundant in English.

Così impervì allo spirito moderno As impervious to the modern spirit
come lo sono quei rozzi contadini as are those rough peasants

1. **Lo** translates 'so' also in such phrases as the following:

Lò credo I think so
Speriāmolo Let us hope so

*f. The reflexive pronoun may be appended, but only in the third person, to the forms of the indicative in addition to those forms listed under **95, b**.

Dicesi It is said

*g. A conjunctive form is sometimes used as subject of the third person. It is unstressed, and usually redundant. The forms are these:

$\text{gli, e'} = \begin{cases} \text{egli} \\ \text{ègolino} \end{cases}$

$\text{la} = \text{ella}$
 $\text{le} = \text{èlleno}$

La non lo creda
Le son molto eleganti

Dò not (you) believe it
They (f.) are very elegant

Gli is used before a word beginning with a vowel or **h**; **e'**, elsewhere.

CONJUNCTIVES AND AUXILIARIES §§ 100-101

1. The similar use of **lo** and **li** as the redundant object of reflexive verbs is provincial and incorrect.

Tu sei ammalato, **lo** si vede You are ill, one sees it

2. The word 'it' in such phrases as 'it is because' etc. is translated, if at all, by **gli** or **egli**.

// Gli è perché le leggi sono troppo It is because the laws are too
rigorose rigorous

101. Some intransitive verbs are conjugated with **essere** and some with **avere**:

a. The following always with **essere**:

andare go	morire die	scendere descend
arrivare arrive	nascere be born	sorgere arise
cadere fall	partire depart	tornare return
comparire appear	parvenire arrive	uscire go out
correre run	piacere please	venire come
entrare enter	rimanere remain	stare be
essere be	riuscire succeed	

*b. The following (for reference only) always with **avere**:

camminare walk	nitire neigh	ridere laugh
deginare dine	parlare speak	sbadigliare yawn
dormire sleep	passaggiare take a walk	sognare dream
giocare play	piangere weep	sonnecchiare nap
muggire low	pranzare dine	starnutire sneeze

*c. The following is a partial list of verbs which take **avere** when the *action* is thought of, and **essere** when the *state resultant* from the action is more considered.

appartenere belong	dimorare dwell	partire divide
bastare suffice	durare last	ritornare return
cessare cease	giungere arrive	salire go up
consistere consist	invecchiare grow old	succedere happen
degenerare degenerate	montare mount	vivere live

102. The verb 'to be' combined with the participle in '-ing,' in such English phrases as 'to be singing,' 'they are writing,' etc., is rendered in Italian by the verbs **stare** and **andare**. With **andare** the idea conveyed is of a *process of change*; with **stare**, of *continuing* without change.

Stanno cantando	They are singing
Sto leggendo	I am reading
Il ragazzo va crescendo a giorno a giorno	The boy is growing day by day
L' albero va perdendo le foglie	The tree is losing its leaves

103. Some Uses of **da**. The preposition **da** has many idiomatic uses:

a. To mean 'at the house of,' 'at,' 'to,' with a word referring to a person.

Andiamo dalla sorella mia	Let us go to my sister's
Sono andati dal guantaio	They have gone to the glover's (the glove-store)
Vuole andare da Chiara?	Do you wish to go to Clara's?
Abita da sua cognata	She lives at her sister-in-law's

b. With **essere**, to mean 'it is to be' with the sense of obligation or propriety. The infinitive then has often passive force.

È da sperarsi che quest' affare non andrà a finire male	It is to be hoped that this affair will not terminate badly
Era da ridere	It was an occasion for laughter

VOCABULARY

la cioccolata	chocolate	la seggiola	chair
Giuseppe	Joseph	la stazione	railway station
il nonno	grandfather	aspettare	wait, wait for
la pasta	small cake	invitare	invite
il patriota	patriot	sperare	hope (spero)
il ritratto	portrait		

due volte twice
a pièdi on foot
fiorentino Florentine

contro against
per tempo early

da, date, 2 sg. and pl. imper. of
dare

di' 2 sg. imper. of dire

andato *p.p.* of andare go

morto *p.p.* of morire die

partito *p.p.* of partire go away

piaciuto *p.p.* of piacere please

rimasto *p.p.* of rimanere remain

sceso *p.p.* of scendere go down

uscito *p.p.* of uscire go out

venuto *p.p.* of venire come

EXERCISE

I

1. Siamo invitati a pranzo da due amici. 2. Eccoci arrivati dagli amici, che abitano vicino alla chiesa; siamo venuti a piedi. 3. Dov'è la tazza? Eccola sullo scaffale. 4. La metta sulla tavola. Non la porti in cucina. 5. L'orologio non lo trovo. 6. Ha i libri italiani che desidero? Eccoli, Signore; vuol comprarli? 7. Molti soldati sono morti nella guerra contro i Turchi. 8. Chi Le ha insegnato la lingua italiana? La lingua italiana m'è stata insegnata da un vecchio patriota italiano. 9. Erano arrivati prima di mezzogiorno i ragazzi? 10. Ecco la Luisina; dalle dei fiori. 11. È venuta una signora; bambine, portatele delle paste. 12. Dimmi, Peppina, sei stata a scuola oggi? 13. Parlandomi della famiglia, mi mostrò un ritratto della madre. 14. Ecco il nonno; bambini, dategli una seggiola. 15. Luigi è andato da Chiara, per mostrarle l'orologio che ha comprato.

II

1. I have lost John's watch, but I hope to [di] find it. 2. Our flag was made by the pupils of the old Florentine school. 3. Here is the bread, but the butter I have not bought. 4. Where is Louis's gun? There it is on the shelf. 5. Having carried it to Louis, return here at once. 6. Let us return to Joseph's; he will show us the Italian national flag which he carried in the war. 7. The soldier has found the guns, but has not yet returned. 8. The mother and aunt of the pupil have died. 9. The little girl went down into the

garden at six this morning. 10. Had John's sisters gone to the station when Mary arrived? 11. Give me some bread, little Clara; do not carry it into the kitchen. 12. The American ladies are not here; they left to-day. 13. Where is Mrs. Rossi? There she is, arrived at the station. 14. Chiarina, tell her to wait for us. 15. We should have spoken to them if they had remained. 16. Have you been in America? We have been in America twice; we liked it very much. 17. The ladies had gone out early this morning; they bought some chocolate, and have now returned to Mary's.

LESSON XII

REFLEXIVE VERBS

104. Reflexive Verbs: *a.* Reflexive verbs are those whose object is the same person as their subject.

Si alza	He rises (<i>lit.</i> raises himself)
M'assuefò ad alzarmi alle sei	I accustom myself to rise at six

1. 'Self' reflexive (which is always the object) must not be confused with 'myself,' etc., intensive, which may be the subject and is expressed by **stesso** or **medesimo** accompanying the pronoun.

L'ho fatto io stesso	I did it myself
L'ha detto lui medesimo	He said it himself

b. In the plural, reflexives may have reciprocal force; if this is not clear from the context, **l'un l'altro** 'one another' may be added to emphasize reciprocal meaning.

Si amano	They love themselves, they love each other
Si amano l'un l'altro	They love each other

c. Reflexives are conjugated in the compound tenses with **essere** (cf. 98).

Mi sono pentito	I have repented
Se si fossero amati	If they had loved each other

1. The participle agrees with the *direct* object (cf. 194, b, 3), which may or may not be the reflexive, personal object.

La signora s'era alzata presto The lady had risen early
Mi sono comprati dei guanti I have bought myself some gloves
Essa si è comprata i guanti, ma essa se li è comprati

*2. But the strict observance of this rule offends the Tuscan ear. Tuscans make the participle agree with the personal object.

Mi sono comprato (or comprata) dei guanti

d. Model Reflexive Verb : synopsis of *fermarsi* 'stop.'

PRESENT		INFINITIVE	PERFECT
fermarsi			ēssersi fermato
fermāndosi		PARTICIPLE	essēndosi fermato
PRESENT		INDICATIVE	PAST DESCRIPTIVE
mi fermo	ci fermiamo		mi fermavo, etc.
ti fermi	vi fermate		
si ferma	si fermano		
FUTURE			PAST ABSOLUTE
mi fermerò, etc.			mi fermai, etc.
PRESENT PERFECT			PAST PERFECT
mi sono fermato, -a	ci siamo fermati, -e		mi ero fermato, etc.
ti sei fermato, -a	vi siete fermati, -e		
s'è fermato, -a	si sono fermati, -e		
FUTURE PERFECT			SECOND PAST PERFECT
mi sarò fermato, etc.			mi fui fermato, etc.
PAST FUTURE			PAST FUTURE PERFECT
mi fermerèi, etc.			mi sarei fermato, etc.

SUBJUNCTIVE	
PRESENT	PAST
mi fermi , <i>etc.</i>	mi fermassi , <i>etc.</i>
PRESENT PERFECT	PAST PERFECT
mi sia fermato , <i>etc.</i>	mi fossi fermato , <i>etc.</i>

a. In expressions essentially reflexive in character.

He dresses himself

b. In many verbs not essentially reflexive in character in English, but invariably so in Italian.

vergognarsi to feel ashamed

I. When the English equivalent of such verbs is transitive, the Italian reflexive often governs an object by means of a preposition.

He perceives a noise
Let us approach that house

*2. The reflexive pronoun is omitted from the infinitive of these verbs when dependent upon **fare, lasciare, sentire, udire, vedere**.

Lo faremo pentire (*refl. pentirsi*) We shall make him repent

*3. The pronoun may be the "dative of reference or concern," merely to add vivacity or intensity; auxiliary/sometimes, rarely, ~~aver~~ *avere*.
Io *mi* viveva di mia sorte contenta I lived content with my lot

c. In the dative, to avoid the use of the possessive with clothing or parts of the body (cf. 109).

She has burned **her** finger
I put on **my** hat

106. Special Uses. a. In the third persons singular and plural, and in the infinitive and participles, the reflexive translates the English passive with agent unexpressed.

Molti libri inglesi si vendono in Italia	Many English books are sold in Italy
Qui si parla francese	French spoken here

*1. The agent may even be expressed, and still the reflexive construction will be retained.

<u>Se ne discuteva molto dal popolo</u>	There was much discussion of it by the people
---	---

b. The English impersonal 'one,' 'we,' 'they,' etc., and the impersonal passive, are translated by the reflexive.

Si dice	They say, it is said
Si va spesso al teatro	People often go to the theater, we often go to the theater
Si può entrare?	May one enter?

*1. **Essersi**, impersonal, takes a plural predicate adjective:

<u>Si è lieti il giorno di Natale</u>	People are happy on Christmas Day
---------------------------------------	-----------------------------------

*c. Italian being a much more impersonal language than English, the reflexive often best translates also the English personal construction.

Se non L e piacciono questi guanti, si barattano	If you do not like these gloves, you may exchange them
Dove si comperano i biglietti?	Where do I buy my tickets?

*d. In the third person singular the reflexive is peculiarly used in Tuscan familiar speech, along with the pronoun of the first person plural, with which in compound tenses the past participle agrees. 'We' in this case is not general or impersonal, necessarily.

<u>Noi si va</u> sempre in chiesa la domenica	We (i.e. our family, our household) always go to church on Sunday
<u>Ci si accorse</u> del suo arrivo	We noticed his arrival
<u>Noi si era</u> allegri ieri	We were joyful yesterday

VOCABULARY

l' amica (<i>pl. amiche</i>) friend (<i>f.</i>)	accomodarsi make oneself com- fortable, sit down (<i>m' accòmodo</i>)
la giornata day, period of one day	alzarsi rise
l' inchiostro <i>m.</i> ink	chiamare call
il libraio bookseller	chiamarsi be named
la macchia spot	<u>far colazione</u> lunch
il vestito dress	<u>fa passare</u> shows in (makes to enter)
alle nove at nine o'clock	fermarsi stop
meno male luckily	insudiciare soil
grasso big	lavarsi wash (oneself)
scuro dark	mèttersi put on (clothes)
	<u>mèttersi a sedere</u> sit down
<u>vergognarsi (di)</u> be ashamed (of)	ricordarsi (di) remember (<i>ricòrdo</i>)
	seguire follow

EXERCISE

I. READING LESSON

LA GIORNATA DELLA NERINA

1. Ecco una cara bambina! 2. Come si chiama? Si chiama Nerina. 3. Nerina passa una giornata felice. 4. Si alza alle sei e aiuta la mamma a preparare il caffè. 5. Si mette un vestito scuro per non insudiciarlo. 6. Non si mette il vestito bianco delle feste. 7. È arrivata a scuola alle nove. 8. A scuola s'è fatte delle grosse macchie d' inchiostro sul vestitino. 9. Meno male che non era il bianco. 10. A mezzogiorno è tornata a far colazione, senza fermarsi per la strada. 11. Prima di far colazione si lava le mani. 12. I bambini non si ricordano sempre di lavarsi le mani. 13. La

sera qualcuno è arrivato. Era un' amica della mamma. 14. Nerina la fa passare, e le dice, " Buona sera, Signora. S' accomodi. Ecco una seggiola."

II

(Use present perfect for past tenses.)

1. At what hour did you get up, ladies? 2. We got up at six; after [the] coffee we visited St. Stephen's church. 3. A little girl followed us. 4. What is your name, little girl? My name is Nerina. 5. We stopped at the bookseller's, to buy some books. 6. The bookseller spoke to us in Italian; we spoke to him in English. 7. Italian is not spoken much in the United States. 8. If Nerina did not remember the lessons, she would feel ashamed. 9. It is said that soldiers are glad to die for their country. 10. Nerina washes her hands and puts on a white dress before taking lunch. 11. She has two white dresses; she does not like (to) soil them. 12. Nerina is happy; two women friends of her [the] mother have arrived. 13. She shows them in, and says, " Good afternoon, ladies! Be seated!"

LESSON XIII

POSSESSIVES

107. Possessives. a. The forms of the possessive adjective are as follows:

SINGULAR	PLURAL
il mio	i miei } my, mine
la mia	le mie }
il tuo	i tuoi } thy, thine
la tua	le tue }
il suo	i suoi } his,
la sua	le sue } her, hers

SINGULAR	PLURAL
il nostro	i nostri
la nostra	le nostre
il vostro	i vostri
la vostra	le vostre
il loro	i loro
la loro	le loro

} our, ours

} your, yours

} their, theirs

1. Both words may precede the noun; or the article may precede and the possessive follow, suggesting intimacy in possession.

I miei libri; i libri miei

My books; my very own books

b. A possessive has the number and person of the possessor, but (except *loro*, invariable) agrees as to ending, in number and gender, with the thing possessed. The context usually makes clear the gender of the possessor.

Hanno venduto *la loro casa*

They have sold *their* house

Maria legge *il suo libro*

Mary is reading *her* book

Giovanni ha perduto *la sua grammatica*

John has lost *his* grammar

*1. When there might be ambiguity, as when the possessor is not the subject of the sentence, *di lui*, *di lei*, *di loro*, with the article, may be substituted for the possessive of the third person.

Mise *il suo* anello nel dito *di lei*

He put *his* ring on *her* finger

Mi disse che *il suo* figliuolo aveva perduto *il di lui* orologio

He told me that *his* little boy had lost *his* (i.e., the boy's) watch

c. The possessive 'its,' when modifying a noun in the accusative case, is translated by *ne* and the definite article.

There is the city! I see *its* towers Ecco la città! *Ne* vedo *le* torri

106. The definite article is omitted from the possessive,

a. When it modifies a noun of family relationship, otherwise unmodified and in the singular. (Augmentatives and diminutives count as modifiers, cf. 228.)

Suo padre morì combattendo per la patria	His father died fighting for his country
I miei figliuoli sono tutti maschiotti	My children are all boys
La mia sorella maggiore abita a Parigi	My eldest sister lives in Paris
Il tuo fratellino sta piangendo	Your little brother is crying

b. When it stands alone in the predicate, with the force of an adjective; unless it distinguishes the possession of one person from that of another.

<u>Quella casa è sua</u>	That house is his (or hers)
--------------------------	-----------------------------

But

Questo libro è <u>il mio</u> ; quell'altro è <u>il vostro</u>	This book is mine; that other one is yours
--	---

c. When preceded by a demonstrative or interrogative adjective, a numeral, or an adjective of quantity.

<u>Questa sua</u> casa	This house of his
<u>Qual suo</u> libro?	Which book of his?
<u>Tre sorelle sue</u> (or, Tre delle sue sorelle)	Three sisters of his, three of his sisters
<u>Molti libri suoi</u>	Many of her books

***d.** When it is part of a title.

Sua Maestà, Loro Altezze	His Majesty, Their Highnesses
--------------------------	-------------------------------

***e.** Usually in the vocative, the possessive more often following the noun.

Quello che vi dico, amico mio, è vero	What I am telling you, my friend, is true
--	--

***f.** In certain set phrases.

<u>Per fortuna loro</u>	By their good luck
<u>In casa nostra</u>	In our house
<u>In camera mia</u>	In my room
<u>A loro volta</u>	In their turn
<u>Con mia gran sorpresa</u>	To my great surprise

g. 'A friend of mine' and similar expressions are rendered *un amico mio*, *un mio amico*, etc.

Tre libri suoi	Three books of his
Una proprietà mia	An estate I own
Lo vede da un suo speciale punto di vista	He sees it from a special point of view of his own

109. In accordance with the greater impersonality of the Italian language (cf. 106, c), the definite article is substituted for the possessive with nouns describing parts of the body or clothing, and often with nouns of family relationship, especially *babbo* and *mamma*. If ownership is indicated, it is by means of the dative conjunctive pronoun (cf. 105, c). In certain familiar phrases, even the article is omitted.

Mette il denaro in tasca	He puts the money in his pocket
Mi sono levato il cappello	I have taken off my hat
Mi duole la testa	My head aches
Hanno sparato e gli hanno strapato un braccio	They shot, and shot away one of his arms
Mi racconta d'aver perduto la madre	He tells me of having lost his mother
Mettiti i guanti	Put on your gloves
Si leva il soprabito	He takes off his overcoat

**a.* *Pròprio* 'own' may intensify the possessive, or be used instead of it.

Ognuno ama la propria patria	Every one loves his own country
------------------------------	---------------------------------

**b.* *Altrui*, which always follows the noun in prose, is an indefinite possessive, meaning 'of others.'

Agisce sempre per il bene altrui	He acts always for the good of others
Lo scendere e il salir per l'altrui scale	Going up and down the stairs of others

**c.* The possessives are used alone, with the noun understood, in a great variety of familiar phrases. Here are a few examples:

Saluta i tuoi da parte dei miei	Greet your family on behalf of mine
Ha molte persone dalla sua	He has many persons on his side
Spendo il mio nel viaggiare	I spend my money in travel
Ne fa troppe delle sue	He does too many of his characteristic ill turns
Ho avuto le mie; avrai le tue	I have had my troubles; you will have yours
Lavoro sul mio	I labor on my own land

VOCABULARY

il babbo papa (<i>my father</i>)	levarsi take off (clothing)
il bosco wood	raccomandare urge, recommend; takes a before a word meaning a person, di before a verb
il cappello hat	sgridare scold
la cosa thing	smarrirsi lose one's way
il guanto glove	far tardi be late
il paese village, country, nation	invece on the contrary, instead <i>my</i>
il paniere basket, <i>cesto, canestro</i>	potrebbero (3 pl. past fut. of potere, irr.) might
il passo step	tiene (3 sg. pres. indic. of tenere, irr.) holds
la sorellina little sister (<i>dimin.</i>)	vanno (3 pl. pres. indic. of andare, irr.) go
destro right	
maggiore elder	
sinistro left	
svogliato listless, unwilling	

EXERCISE

I

1. Giannetta e Marcellina vanno alla scuola del paese. 2. Non si mettono i guanti. 3. Giannetta porta i loro libri, e Marcellina tiene il paniere con la mano sinistra. 4. La mamma e il babbo raccomandano alle due bambine di non fermarsi nel bosco. 5. Potrebbero smarrirsi e far tardi a scuola. 6. Giannetta, la maggiore, è una bambina giudiziosa; Marcellina, invece, è una piccola svogliata. 7. Ha sempre tante cose da vedere, che si ferma ogni cinque

passi. 8. Non bisogna far tardi! — dice Giannetta — Il babbo e la mamma ci sgrideranno. 9. Si levi il cappello, Signorina. Non si metta i guanti. 10. Abbiamo i nostri libri, e il loro paniere, e molte cose loro. 11. Mia madre è dalla mia sorella maggiore. 12. Dov'è il suo paniere? È sulla mia tavola.

II

1. Marcellina is holding my basket in her right hand. 2. Do not be late to school, Marcellina; your father and mother will scold you. 3. My sisters live in Florence, but they are now at Clara's. 4. Marcellina will stop every three steps, but her elder sister would not stop. 5. The little girls would lose their way if they should stop in the wood. 6. Marcellina says to her sister, "We have not lost our way." 7. Does he like his school? 8. Is this your house? Yes, it is ours. 9. My mother is talking with my elder brother. 10. I take off my gloves. I have lost my hat. 11. My brothers are going to school. 12. There is their house. 13. Have they bought yours? 14. My brothers say the pupil has a book of mine.

LESSON XIV

CHANGES OF LETTERS. RELATIVE PRONOUNS

110. Changes of Letters in Regular Verbs.

a. Verbs of the first conjugation ending in **-care** and **-gare**, **-ciare** and **-giare**, retain throughout the conjugation that sound of **c** or **g** which is heard in the infinitive.

1. Verbs in **-care** and **-gare** insert **h** after **c** or **g** before **e** or **i**: **paghi**, **cercherò**.

2. Verbs in **-ciare** and **-giare** omit **i** before **e** or **i**: **lasciemo**, **mangi**, **cominciamo**.

b. Other verbs in **-iare** drop the **i**, if unaccented, before another **i**.

Stūdio, studi, stūdiño; but spio, spii, spīno

c. Verbs of the second conjugation in **-cere** and **-gere** do not retain this sound of **c** and **g** except where it would occur naturally.

Vincere gives **vinco, vincono, vince, vinciamo**, etc.

d. Some verbs, as **giocare, rotare, sonare**, usually change **o** of the stem to **uo** wherever it takes the accent.

Suqno, sonerò; giuqca, giochiamo

1. Conversely, some verbs like **cuqcere, muqvere**, drop the **u** of the infinitive stem wherever the syllable containing it does not take the accent.

Cuqco, cocqsti; muqve, movqndo

111. a. A number of third-conjugation verbs do not have, in the present indicative, present subjunctive, and imperative, the inchoative forms in **-isco** etc. Such a verb is the model, **sentire**, given below.

PRESENT INDICATIVE		PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE		IMPERATIVE	
sęnto	sentiamo	sęnta	sentiamo		sentiamo
sęnti	sentite	sęnta	sentiate	sęnti	sentite
sęnte	sęntono	sęnta	sęntano	sęnta	sęntano

b. The following are conjugated like **sentire**:

aprire (<i>irr.</i>) open	fuggire flee	soffrire suffer
bollire boil	offrire (<i>irr.</i>) offer	tossire cough
coprire (<i>irr.</i>) cover	pentirsi repent	vestire dress
cucire (<i>irr.</i>) sew	seguire follow	divertire amuse
dormire sleep	servire serve	

*c. The following (and others) are conjugated both ways :

applaudire	applaud	mentire	lie	sortire	go out
assorbire	absorb	nutrire	nourish		
comparire	appear	partire	depart		

1. **Partire** and **sortire** use the inchoative form (in **-isco** etc.) only when transitive. *partire* 'depart', *sortire* 'go out'

112. Uses of *da*. The preposition **da** is used before nouns referring to persons, without article, to mean 'like,' 'in the character of,' 'characteristic of,' 'as.' (Cf. 162, c.)

Ha agito da uomo	He has acted like a man
S'è travestito da monaco	He has disguised himself as a monk

113. The subjunctive is used in dependent clauses after verbs of *wishing* and *willing*, when the subject is not the same as that of the independent clause. (With the same subject, the infinitive is used.)

Desidero che Lei legga questo libro	I wish you to read this book
Vogliamo che lo faccia	We wish him to do it

114. The Relative Pronoun (cf. 189). These forms are used of either persons or things :

a. Che 'who,' 'whom,' 'which,' 'that'; invariable, used as the subject or object of a verb. It cannot be omitted.

L' uomo ch' io ho veduto	The man whom I saw
L' uomo che m' ha veduto	The man who saw me
I fiori che compro	The flowers I am buying

b. Cui 'of which,' 'for,' 'by,' 'with' (etc.) 'whom' or 'which'; invariable, used after prepositions. 'Whose' is **il cui**.

<i>il</i> signore a cui ho venduto la casa	The gentleman to whom I sold the house
Lo sciopero di cui tutti parlano in questo momento	The strike of which everybody is talking at this moment

c. Il quale (la quale, i quali, le quali), inflected, used in all cases, and frequently instead of cui after prepositions, especially for clearness. Its article is contracted with the prepositions (cf. 75).

La signora alla quale ha dato il libro	The lady to whom you have given the book
La figlia dell' avvocato, la quale abita a Firenze	The lawyer's daughter, who lives at Florence. (La quale, being feminine, indicates the daughter, not the father.)

VOCABULARY

la lingua language	avvezarsi a accustom oneself to
la lira lira (twenty cents)	cercare look for; w. di try to
il maestro teacher	(w. inf.)
la penna a serbatoio fountain pen	divertirsi amuse oneself
lo studio study	dormire sleep
la tasca (pl. tasche) pocket	lasciare leave, let
il viso face <i>fr. viso?</i>	mancare (w. dat.) be lacking
difficile difficult	pagare pay, pay for
facile easy	sentire hear, feel, smell
scorso last, past	servirsi di make use of
a poco a poco little by little	studiare study
	vendere sell
	vestirsi dress oneself

EXERCISE

I

1. Comprammo quella casa la settimana scorsa; paghiamola presto.
2. Cominceremo a studiare alle otto; lasceremo i nostri libri sullo scaffale.
3. Metta il pane nel paniere; non lo lasci sul piatto.
4. Lo studio d' una lingua è difficile; bisogna avvezarsi a poco a poco a parlarla.
5. Giannetta si lavò il viso quando tornò da scuola.
6. Suo padre gli dà tre lire. Si mette il denaro in tasca.
7. Luigi ha perduto i guanti; cerchiamoli.
8. M' ha parlato da

padre. 9. Ho perduto la mia penna a serbatoio. Si serva della mia. 10. Se gli vendo l'orologio, lo pagherà domani? No, perchè gli manca il denaro. 11. Il maestro non desidera che gli scolari lascino lo studio per divertirsi. 12. Se si divertissero troppo, mancherebbe loro il tempo per studiare.

II

1. He sold ^{he} me his house last week; when shall I pay ^{for it}?
2. I am finishing my work, but my sister sleeps.
3. If he were a soldier, he would dress like a soldier.
4. ^{we} We should leave Italy if we did not lack money.
5. Let us try to amuse ourselves.
6. They wish their mother to sleep.
7. He puts in his pocket the four lire with which he will pay for his book.
8. The pupils are studying the Italian language, and are accustoming themselves little by little to speak it.
9. Our teacher has lost his fountain pen; let us look for it.
10. Giannetta will wash her face and hands before taking lunch.
11. I am trying to accustom myself to make use of my fountain pen.
12. Joseph would make use of his if he studied.
13. He does not like study, but he wishes his brother to study.

LESSON XV

COMPARISON

115. Comparatives. *a.* The comparative is formed by placing **più** 'more,' or **meno** 'less,' before an adjective or adverb.

b. 'Than' is **di** before nouns, pronouns, or numerals,

Il padre è più grande **del** figlio

The father is taller **than** the son

I nostri vicini sono più ricchi **di** noi

Our neighbors are richer **than** we

Ho più **di** tre palle

I have more **than** three balls

But changes to **che** —

1. After **piuttosto**, **prima**, meaning 'rather,' 'sooner.'

Prenderei quella casa **piuttosto che** questa I should take that house sooner than this

14, I 7. COMPARATIVES

§§ 115-116

2. When the comparison is between two nouns,

Mi piace più la campagna che la città

I like the country better than the city

Non più bevy del fiume acqua che sangue

He drank from the river no more water than blood

c. 'Than' is che before adjectives, adverbs, prepositional phrases, infinitives, and participles.

L' avaro è più ricco che sàvio

The miser is more rich than wise

Meglio tardi che mai

Better late than never

I giovani si preoccupano più delle eleganze della vita che dello stúdio

Young people think more of what is fashionable than of their studies

d. 'Than' is che non or di quel che before inflected verbs.

Lo spensierato parla più che non (or di quel che) pensa

The thoughtless man talks more than he thinks

116. The Superlative. a. The superlative is formed by prefixing the definite article to the comparative, from which it may be distinguished sometimes only by the context.

La sua stanza è la più grande

Her room is the largest (or the larger, if only two are in question)

b. When the superlative follows the noun, as it may, the article of the superlative is omitted.

Agosto è il mese più caldo dell' anno

August is the hottest month of the year

c. The preposition used with the superlative is fra, sometimes di.

Ognuno crede che la sua patria sia la più bella fra (or di) tutte

Every one thinks his own country the most beautiful of all

d. An absolute superlative is formed by adding the suffix **-issimo** to the stem of the adjective ; **-mente** may be added to the feminine of this, to make an absolute superlative for the adverb. These are in constant use in conversation.

La villa del suo amico è bella? Your friend's villa is beautiful?

È **bellissima**

Very beautiful indeed

1. The adjectives **acre**, **celebre**, **intero**, **salubre** (and in poetry, **misero**) have an absolute superlative in **-errimo** : **celeberrimo**.

117. Irregular Comparisons. *a.* The following words are compared irregularly :

buono 'good'	migliore	il migliore l' ottimo
bene 'well'	meglio	il meglio benissimo ottimamente
cattivo 'bad'	peggiore	il peggiore il peggiorissimo
male 'badly'	peggio	il peggio pessimamente
alto 'high'	superiore	il superiore il sommo
basso 'low'	inferiore	l' inferiore l' infimo
grande 'large'	maggiore	il maggiore il massimissimo
piccolo 'small'	minore	il minore il minimissimo
molto 'much'	più	il più moltissimo
poco 'little'	meno	il meno pochissimo

b. All these may be compared also regularly, but sometimes with different meanings.

COMPARATIVES

§§ 117-119

1. The irregular forms of **buono**, **cattivo**, **bene**, and **male** are the more usual. But **ottimo**, **pessimo**, etc., are absolute rather than comparative.

2. **Maggiore** and **minore** usually mean 'older' and 'younger.' The regular forms refer to size.

*3. **Superiore** and **inferiore** are oftener figurative, the regular forms literal.

*4. **Meglio** is used as an adjective in the predicate after ~~essere~~, and still more widely in familiar speech; similarly **peggio**, but more familiarly.

<p>Scelgo questo: è il meglio Fra i tiranni dell' Italia moderna, i Borboni erano i peggio</p>	<p>I choose this; it is the best Among the tyrants of modern Italy the Bourbons were the worst</p>
--	--

118. **Subjunctive after Superlative.** The subjunctive is required after the superlative and 'only' in relative clauses.

<p>Venezia è la più bella città ch'io abbia mai vista Il quarto reggimento è il solo che sia partito</p>	<p>Venice is the most beautiful city I have ever seen The fourth regiment is the only one that has left</p>
---	--

119. **Comparison of Equality.** This is expressed by **tanto** . . . **quanto**, **così** . . . **come**, 'as . . . as,' 'so . . . as.'

<p>Il mio amico è tanto alto quanto mio fratello Non è così bella come sua sorella</p>	<p>My friend is as tall as my brother mio fratello She is not so beautiful as her sister</p>
--	--

a. **Tanto** and **così** are more often omitted.

<p>L'argento non è caro quanto l'oro</p>	<p>Silver is not so precious as gold</p>
--	--

VOCABULARY

l' **Amērica** (f.) America
 l' **Àustria** (f.) Austria
 il **conquistatore** conqueror
 l' **eredità** (f.) heritage

l' **Inghilterra** (f.) England
 il **pensiero** thought
 la **pratica** practice
 il **pregio** value

lo scrittore	writer	tedesco	German
la Spagna	Spain	vinto	conquered (<i>from vincere, irr.</i>)
la storia	history	così	thus, so, as
lo strumento	instrument	dève	3 sg. pres. indic. of dovere (<i>irr.</i>) must
imporre (<i>irr.</i>)	impose; imponeva,	leggendo	pres. part. of leggere (<i>irr.</i>) read
3 sg. past descr. indic.		esprime	3 sg. pres. indic. of esprimere (<i>irr.</i>) express
ricevere	receive	vede	3 sg. pres. indic. of vedere (<i>irr.</i>) see
tenere (<i>irr.</i>)	hold	e via dicendo	and so on, et cetera
solo	only		
spagnuolo	Spanish, Spaniard		
tanto	so, so much, (<i>pl.</i>) so many		

EXERCISE

I
con due ?

1. La lingua è lo strumento col quale l'uomo esprime i suoi pensieri. 2. Perchè ogni nazione deve tenere in gran pregio la propria lingua? 3. Perchè l'ha ricevuta come sacra eredità dai padri, ed è il più nobile patrimonio di un popolo. 4. Leggendo la storia, si vede come i conquistatori cercarono di imporre ai popoli vinti la propria lingua. 5. Così perderebbero il carattere della nazionalità. 6. Così Roma imponeva la lingua latina, la Spagna la lingua spagnuola, l'Inghilterra la lingua inglese, l'Austria la lingua tedesca, e via dicendo. 7. La lingua spagnuola non è difficile quanto l'inglese; l'inglese è più facile della tedesca. 8. Qual è la più grande fra tutte le nazioni? 9. Gli scrittori pensano più che non parlano. 10. Questo è il solo libro tedesco che si trovi sullo scaffale. 11. Desideriamo che nostra sorella parli inglese, ma le manca la pratica.

II
perillare

1. Language is the instrument of the writer. 2. The English language is spoken in the United States. 3. The history of Spain is longer than that of America. 4. Reading it, one sees why

conquerors try to impose their own language on conquered peoples.

5. Are soldiers greater than writers? 6. The German language is the most difficult of all.

7. The Spaniard would have been a better soldier if he had been better paid. 8. Winter is colder than autumn.

9. My little sister sings more than she talks. 10. My brother and my sisters have returned from Rome, and have brought me many Italian books.

11. This is the greatest war that has ever (mai) been.

12. They will leave their books on the shelf; let us look for them.

13. We like our own house; it is larger than yours; it is rather large than beautiful.

LESSON XVI

THE VERB *AVERE*120. The Verb *avere* 'have.'

PRESENT		INFINITIVE	PERFECT	
avere			avere avuto	
avendo		PARTICIPLE	avendo avuto	
PRESENT		INDICATIVE	PAST DESCRIPTIVE	
hò	abbiamo		avevo	avevamo
hai	avete		avevi	avevate
ha	hanno		aveva	avevano
FUTURE			PAST ABSOLUTE	
avrò	avremo		ebbi	avemmo
avrai	avrete		avesti	aveste
avrà	avranno		ebbe	ebbero
PRESENT PERFECT			SECOND PAST PERFECT	
hò avuto, etc.			ebbi avuto, etc.	
PAST PERFECT			FUTURE PERFECT	
avevo avuto, etc.			avrò avuto, etc.	

PAST FUTURE	
avrei	avremmo
avresti	avreste
avrebbe	avrebbero

PAST FUTURE PERFECT

avrei avuto, *etc.*

IMPERATIVE

	abbiamo
abbi	abbiate
abbia	abbiano

SUBJUNCTIVE

PRESENT

abbia	abbiamo
abbia	abbiate
abbia	abbiano

PRESENT PERFECT

abbia avuto, *etc.*

PAST

avessi	avessimo
avessi	aveste
avesse	avessero

PAST PERFECT

avessi avuto, *etc.*

a. The irregular past absolute of **avere** may be taken as the model of all irregular past absolutes. It will be noticed that three forms are regular: the second person singular and the first and second plural. For example **leggere** 'read':

lessi	leggemmo
leggesti	leggeste
lesse	lessero

b. Of very many verbs the past participle also is irregular, and their principal parts are the infinitive, the first person singular of the past absolute, and the past participle, as **leggere**, **lessi**, **letto**.

121. The compound tenses of all transitive and some intransitive verbs are conjugated with **avere**.

a. The most important intransitives conjugated with **avere** are—

bollire boil	passaggiare take a walk	tremare tremble
dimorare dwell	stadigliare yawn	viaggiare travel
dormire sleep	starnutire sneeze	

21
100%
ple!

*b. Certain other verbs, such as *tacere* 'be silent' and *vivere* 'live,' may be conjugated with either: with *avere* when the idea of action predominates, with *essere* when the idea of condition is more important.

122. The past participle with *avere* usually agrees with a preceding direct object, and it may agree when the object follows.

Ho scritto (or scritte) due lettere

Ne ho scritte due

Veda questi cavalli. Li abbiamo
comprati oggi

La catena che mi ha prestata

I have written two letters

I have written two of them

See these horses. We have bought
them to-day

The chain you lent me

123. Special Uses of *avere*. a. Avere da with the infinitive means 'have to.'

Ho da scrivere tre lettere } I have to write three letters
Ho tre lettere da scrivere }

b. Idioms with *avere*:

Aver caldo

Aver freddo

Aver fame

Aver sete

Aver sonno

Aver paura (di)

Aver soggezione

Aver ragione

Aver torto

Aver fùria, aver fretta

Ha fame?

Avēvano sonno?

Non ho freddo

Ha ragione.

Abbiamo paura

Ho fùria

To be too warm

To be too cold

To be hungry

To be thirsty

To be sleepy

To be afraid (of)

To be nervous, embarrassed

To be right

To be wrong, be in the wrong

To be in a hurry

Are you hungry?

Were they sleepy?

I am not cold

You are right

We are afraid

I am in a hurry

124. The Conjunctive *ne*. *a.* 'Some' or 'any,' when pronouns (cf. 77), are translated by *ne*. It means also 'of it,' 'of them,' and is equivalent to *di* plus a personal pronoun.

Avete delle mele? No, non *ne* ho Have you any apples? No, I have not any

b. *Ne* must be used in Italian when its equivalent would not be required in English; and it is sometimes logically pleonastic in Italian, though rhetorically emphatic. Cf. 100, *d.*

Ha dei libri tedeschi? Have you any German books?
Sì, *ne* ho. *Ne* ho molti Yes, I have. I have a great many
Di quest' affare *ne* sai nulla? Do you know anything about this matter?

c. The past participle agrees with *ne* (cf. 122).

VOCABULARY

il biglietto	ticket	dimenticare (di)	forget (to)
la classe	class	leggere, lessi, letto	read
la guardia	guard, conductor	mettere, misi, messo	put
il minuto	minute	permettere (di), permisi, permesso	permit
il posto	place, room	prendere, presi, preso	take
lo scompartimento	compartment	scrivere, scrissi, scritto	write
il treno	train	detto <i>p.p.</i> of dire (<i>irr.</i>)	say
<u>fra</u>	between, among; (<i>with a measure of time</i>) in, within	prego, niente	you're welcome, don't mention it
pronto	ready; all aboard		

EXERCISE

I

1. Quando si parte per Roma? Alle nove. 2. Mi compri un libro, perchè desidero di leggere in treno. 3. Quando parte il primo treno per Firenze? Fra dieci minuti. 4. Non dimentichi di scrivermi. 5. Ha i biglietti, Giovanni? Ne ho due; mi manca un biglietto. 6. Quando una persona dice — Grazie — si risponde

sempre — Prego! — o — Niente! 7. Desidera ch' io prenda i biglietti? Li metterò in tasca. 8. Ha trovato i biglietti che aveva perduti? 9. Li ho trovati in tasca. Eccoli. 10. È questo uno scompartimento di prima classe? 11. Sì, ma non c'è più posto, Signora. Mi permetta di offrirle il mio. 12. S'accomodi, Signora. — Grazie tante! — Prego! 13. Quando si entra in uno scompartimento dove ci sono delle persone, si dice — Permessso — o — Con permesso. 14. Si ha da prendere i biglietti prima di partire. 15. Si dice — Due biglietti di prima classe. 16. La guardia dice — Pronti! — e il treno parte.

II

(Translate the present perfect by the present perfect, the simple past by the past absolute.)

1. Please give me three first-class tickets to [for] Rome. 2. If I had put my tickets in my pocket, I should not have lost them. 3. My train will arrive in five minutes. 4. I read your letter; we did not read our books in the train. 5. If I had my letters, I should not forget to read them. 6. He took their tickets and put them in his pocket; he did not ^{permitted} permit me to take them. 7. Have you written the letters? I have written two of them. 8. We had our books in the compartment, but we forgot to read them. 9. Have you any roses? Yes, I have. I have bought six to-day. 10. The English writer who lives in Florence wrote these books. Have you read them? 11. May I enter? Is there room in the compartment? 12. The conductor would have said "All aboard!" ^{overboard} in two minutes, and we had not yet found a place. 13. They had to buy some German books at the bookseller's, but he did not have any. 14. Did we put? I permitted. You did not read, They wrote. Did he read? Thou tookest. They took. 15. Are you not too hot? He is in the wrong. We were sleepy. I am in a hurry.

LESSON XVII

TWO CONJUNCTIVE OBJECTS

125. Two Conjunctive Objects. *a.* When two conjunctive objects, direct and indirect, are governed by the same verb, the indirect (except *loro*) precedes the direct. Both precede the verb (cf. 95, *a*), or are appended to it (cf. 95, *b*).

Cę ne dà	He gives us some
Vę lę mostra	He shows it to you
Făccelo vedere	Show it to us
Lę ęi avvicinę	He approached her

1. Loro, as always, follows the verb.

Compră un cane, ę lę da loro	He buys a dog, and gives it to them
------------------------------	-------------------------------------

b. When immediately followed by *lo*, *li*, *la*, *le*, or *ne*,

1. *Mi*, *ti*, *ci*, *vi*, and *si* change *i* to *e*, and become respectively *me*, *te*, *ce*, *ve*, and *se*.

Tę li porta	He carries them to you
Mi mostra una ręșă e me la dà	He shows me a rose and gives it to me
Pręnde il cappello e se lę mette	He takes his hat and puts it on

2. *Gli* and *le* alike become *glię*, being then joined to the following conjunctive to make one word.

Finii la lęttera e glięla spedii	I finished the letter and sent it to her, or to him
----------------------------------	---

126. Conjunctive Adverbs. *a.* *Ci*, *vi*, and *ne* are adverbs as well as pronouns, *ci* and *vi* meaning 'here,' 'there' (of some place already referred to), and *ne* meaning 'thence.' They are conjunctive in character, as they precede the verb (or are appended as enclitics), and are unemphatic.

È stato da suo cugino?	Have you been at your cousin's?
Sì, ne vengo ora	Yes, I am coming from there
Pensava di andarvi io	I was thinking of going there myself
Andiāmoci domani	Let us go there to-morrow

1. Ci and vi are sometimes equivalent to 'at it,' 'to it,' taking the place of a plus a conjunctive pronoun of the third person, but seldom used of persons. This use is frequent with verbs which take a before their object (cf. 224, a).

Pensa al suo paese?	Are you thinking of your country?
Ci penso sempre	I am always thinking of it

2. Ci means a place nearer the speaker, but is tending to supersede vi in vivid speech.

b. Ci and vi undergo the same changes as adverbs that they do as pronouns (cf. 125, b).

Non ce n' è	There isn't any
Ve ne trovo pochi	I find few of them there

*c. Rules for position of these adverbs are intricate;

1. Ci follows mi, ti, vi, and precedes si, no, and these forms which begin with l.

Mi ci abituo	I am accustoming myself to it
Ci si abitua	He is accustoming himself to it
Ce lo trovo	He found it there

2. Vi follows mi, and precedes other forms.

Mi vi recherò subito	I shall take my way thither at once
Ve lo misero	They put it there

3. Ne follows either ci or vi, and precedes the forms beginning with l. and follows all others

Ce ne andiamo	We are going away
Ne lo tolse	He took it away from there, from him, etc.

127. Certain reflexive verbs take a second conjunctive in certain meanings, as andārsene 'go away,' prēndersela 'take it ill,' and avērsela a male 'be offended.'

Andiāmocene

Let us go away

Andātosene, non tornò più

Having gone, he did not return again

Easēndosela presa

Having taken it ill

Non se l'abbia a male

Do not be offended

VOCABULARY

l'avviso (*m.*) sign, notice

accompagnare accompany

il giornale newspaper

aspettare wait, wait for

Londra London

avē notizie di receive news from

le notizie news

avērsela a male be offended

Parigi Paris

dare il buon viaggio a wish a

lo sportello ticket window

pleasant journey to

la stazione railway station

partire leave (*intr.*)

il viaggiatore passenger, traveler

prēndersela take it ill *de l'essere preso*

per favore please

spōrgersi, sporsi, sporto lean out

pericoloso dangerous

danno 3 *pl. pres. ind. of dare* (*irr.*)

secondo second

give

a tempo in time

terzo third

EXERCISE

I

1. Si monta in treno. 2. Tutti si danno il buon viaggio. 3. Il treno parte fra poco: tornerò subito alla stazione. 4. Non bisogna far tardi, se vogliamo arrivarvi a tempo. 5. Non se la prenda. 6. Voglio accompagnare. 7. Dove si comprano i biglietti? Allo sportello. 8. Mi dia due biglietti di seconda classe per Parigi. 9. Me li dia subito, per favore. 10. Nei treni italiani c'è sempre un avviso, che dice: *È pericoloso sporgersi*. 11. Ho avuto notizie di un mio amico. 12. La lettera che m'ha scritta è più interessante che lunga. 13. Desidera ch'io gliela legga? 14. Il suo viaggio è

- stato pericoloso. 15. Non se l' ha a male; non me ne ha parlato.
16. Ha comprato una bellissima villa, e desidera di mostrarmela.
17. Fermiamoci alla prima stazione per visitarla.

II

1. Let John accompany them to the station. 2. Will he buy the tickets? Yes, he will buy them, and [will] bring them to us. 3. One buys one's tickets at the ticket-window. 4. Let us return there at once. 5. Our brother will not look for us there, but he will wait for us near the door. 6. Wait a minute. Here are the newspapers I have bought. 7. I will read them to you, if you wish me to read them to you. 8. Don't lean out, Marcellina. 9. Two travelers in the compartment are talking of Paris; they say that it is more beautiful than London. 10. Do not lean out, madam. It is dangerous. 11. He buys a gun and gives it to them. 12. They will show it to her. 13. Having felt offended, he does not wish me to speak to him about it.
- he & give me parle*
→ averlo a la mente

LESSON XVIII

IRREGULAR VERBS

128. Irregular Verb: Regular Forms. a. Certain parts of all irregular verbs except *essere* are always regular: the past descriptive indicative, past subjunctive, and present participle, the second person plural of the present indicative, and the second person singular and first and second persons plural of the past absolute.

1. In addition, the second and third persons singular and first plural of the present indicative, and the first and second plural of the present subjunctive, are regular in many irregular verbs, as *rimanere*.

129. The Verb *rimanere* 'remain.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS : *rimanere*, *rimanendo*, *rimango*, *rimarrò*, *rimasi*,
rimasto (*or rimaso*)

		INDICATIVE	
		PRESENT	PAST DESCRIPTIVE
<i>rimango</i>	<i>rimaniamo</i> , <i>rimanghiamo</i>		<i>rimanèvo</i> , <i>etc.</i>
<i>rimani</i>	<i>rimanete</i>		
<i>rimane</i>	<i>rimàngono</i>		
		FUTURE	PAST ABSOLUTE
<i>rimarrò</i>	<i>rimarremo</i>	<i>rimasi</i>	<i>rimanemmo</i>
<i>rimarrai</i>	<i>rimarrete</i>	<i>rimanèsti</i>	<i>rimaneste</i>
<i>rimarrà</i>	<i>rimarranno</i>	<i>rimase</i>	<i>rimāsero</i>
PAST FUTURE			
<i>rimarrei</i> , <i>etc.</i>			
IMPERATIVE			
		<i>rimani</i>	<i>rimaniamo</i>
		<i>rimanga</i>	<i>rimanete</i>
			<i>rimàngano</i>
		SUBJUNCTIVE	
		PRESENT	PAST
<i>rimanga</i>	<i>rimaniamo</i>		<i>rimanèssi</i> , <i>etc.</i>
<i>rimanga</i>	<i>rimaniate</i>		
<i>rimanga</i>	<i>rimàngano</i>		

130. **Principal Parts.** To the three principal parts of regular verbs (cf. 91) must be added, for wholly irregular verbs, the first person singular of the present indicative, of the past absolute, and of the future. But of many (cf. 120, *b*) the infinitive, past absolute, and past participle are enough, and the present participle is required only for a few, like *porre*, *ponendo*, or *dire*, *diceudo*, where its stem differs from that of the infinitive. The system of formation (except for *essere*, 96) is as follows :

a. From the present participle :

1. The past descriptive.
2. The second person plural of the present indicative. EXCEPTIONS: **dire** and **fare**, which have **dite** and **fate**.
3. The second person singular, and first and second plural, of the past absolute. EXCEPTIONS: **dare** and **stare**, which change **a** in the stem to **e** (**desti**, **stemmo**, etc.).
4. The past subjunctive. EXCEPTIONS: **dare** and **stare**, as above.
5. Often, as in **rimanere**, the second and third persons singular and first plural of the present indicative, and the first and second plural of the present subjunctive.

b. From the first person singular of the present indicative :

1. The third person plural of that tense. EXCEPTIONS: **andare, avere, dare, fare, sapere, stare**, which have **vanno, hanno, danno, fanno, sanno, stanno**.
2. The entire singular and the third person plural of the present subjunctive. EXCEPTIONS: **avere, dare, sapere, stare**, which have **abbia, dia, sappia, stia**, and **abbiano, diano, sappiano, stiano**.

NOTE. The other persons of the present indicative and subjunctive may be regular, as in *rimanere*, or not; in any case the first and second plural of the subjunctive follow the first plural of the indicative,

c. From the future, whether regular or irregular, is formed the past future.

d. From the first person singular of the past absolute are formed the third singular and plural of that tense (cf. **120, a**).

e. The imperative of irregular verbs is identical with the corresponding persons of the present indicative and subjunctive, *except* **avere**, **essere**, **sapere**, ^{*volere*} where it follows the subjunctive (except the second singular); and **andare**, **dare**, **dire**, **fare**, **stare**, which have in the second singular the shortened forms **va'**, **da'**, **di'**, **fa'**, **sta'** (cf. 100, b).

NOTE. Only as many parts of a verb will be found in the special vocabularies as are necessary to its conjugation on the principles just explained. If the present and future are omitted, they are regular. If the first person only of the present is given (unless marked *irr.*), then the present indicative and subjunctive are to be conjugated like *rimanere*. Unusual or alternative forms are to be found in the alphabetical list of irregular verbs.

VOCABULARY

il bacio (*pl.* baci) kiss

compagno, -a companion

il dolce sweetmeat, dessert

la licenza leave; *in licenza* on leave

Pasqua (*f.*) Easter

for *devi* (2 *sg. pres. ind.* of *dovere*, *irr.*) must

sta' (2 *sg. imper.* of *fare*, *irr.*) make, have

mai ever

sta' (2 *sg. imper.* of *stare*, *irr.*) be

vieni (2 *sg. imper.* of *venire*)

inviare send

mandare send, order

parere, *paio*, *parro*, *parvi*, *parso* seem, appear *paio, pare, par*

promettere (di), *promisi*, *promesso* promise (to)

riabbracciare embrace again

vedere, *vedrò*, *vidi*, *visto* see

allegro joyful, happy

disperato heartbroken

dispiacente sorry

francese French

mille a thousand

sicuro sure, safe

EXERCISE

I. READING LESSON

PASQUA

il 12 aprile, 1914

Caro Lucio

La mamma è disperata. Come ci avevi promesso, ti s'aspettava tutti per Pasqua; si era sicuri che ti avrebbero mandato in licenza, ed io volevo vederti vestito da soldato. O come mai non ti hanno più mandato? Povero Lucio, anche tu devi essere molto dispiacente!

Il babbo e la mamma ti hanno inviato dei dolci; il giorno di Pasqua sta' allegro coi tuoi compagni, e ricordati di noi.

Fa' buona Pasqua, e vieni presto presto; ci par mille anni a tutti di riabbracciarti.
Tanti baci del tuo

piccolo fratello

Mino

II

1. The teacher showed me the letter which the pupil had written.
2. What is the name of the little boy who wrote the letter? His name is Mino.
3. Have you any sweetmeats, Mino? No, but my brother has promised to buy me some.
4. These are the most beautiful roses I have ever seen.
5. They saw Lucio (on) Easter Day; he had returned on leave to his brother's.
6. Do you wish some water? Yes, bring me a glass (of it).
7. Here is my fountain pen; make use of it, pray [pure].
8. If I had made use of it, I should have feared to [di] lose it.
9. Return home, my brother; it seems to me a thousand years till I see you again [rivedere].
10. If they returned to London, they would remain there six weeks.
11. My sisters wish me to remain in Florence, because they will soon return thither.
12. If we should see some French books at the bookseller's we should not forget to send you some.

LESSON XIX

THE VERBS DARE, SAPERE, VOLERE

131. The Verb *dare* (cf. 130, e) 'give.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *dare, dando, dò, darò, dètti or dièdi, dato*

PRESENT INDICATIVE		PAST ABSOLUTE		PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE	
dò	diamo	dètti, dièdi	dèmmo	dia	diamo
dai	date	dèsti	dèste	dia	diate
dà	danno	dètte, diède	dèttero, dièdero	dia	diano

*a. Idioms with **dare** (for reference):

- dare addosso a to hold to blame
 dare a fare a to give trouble, make work or bother for
 dare ad intendere a to make (one) believe
 darci dentro to guess right
 darsi d' attorno to look about, try every means
 dar del tu, del Lei, etc., to use tu, or Lei
 dar fuoco a to set on fire
 dare in una risata, in ^{paroxysm} singulti to burst into laughter, into sobbing
 dar la buona notte, il buon giorno to say good night, good day
 dar la mano a to shake hands with
 dar luogo a to give rise to
 dar nel secentismo to fall into seventeenth-century affectations
 dar noia a to disturb, annoy
 dar nell' occhio to be conspicuous
 dar pensiero a to cause worry to
 darai pensiero to worry, feel worried (*a causa di - on account of*)
 dar retta a to heed
 dar sull' Arno to face on the Arno

132. The Verb **sapere** 'know.'PRINCIPAL PARTS: **sapere, sapendo, so, saprò, seppi, saputo**

PRESENT INDICATIVE

so sappiamo
 sai sapete
 sa sanno

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

sappia sappiamo
 sappia sappiate
 sappia sappiano

a. Special meanings of **sapere**:

1. When followed directly by the infinitive, it means 'be able,' in the sense of to know how, to have learned how.

Non **sa** leggere nè scrivere He cannot read or write

2. It may mean 'learn of.'

Ho **saputo** la cosa stamane I **learned** of the matter this morning

3. Followed by di, it means 'smack of' or 'know about.'

Calamecca, nome che <u>sa</u> di saracino	Calamecca, a name which smacks of the Saracen
Di storia patria <u>ne</u> sai nulla?	Do you know anything about the history of your country?

4. Saperne di means 'have to do with,' 'hear of,' 'put up with.'

La Francia non volle mai <u>saperne</u> di una tassa di questo genere	France would never hear of a tax of this kind
---	--

133. The Verb *volere* 'will,' 'wish,' 'intend.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *volere, volendo, voglio, vorrò, vòlli, voluto*

PRESENT INDICATIVE

voglio	vogliamo
vuoi	volette
vuole	vogliono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

voglia	vogliamo
voglia	vogliate
voglia	vogliano

a. Special meanings of *volere*:

1. With *ci*, in the third person, it means 'it takes,' 'it needs.'

Quanto denaro <u>ci</u> vuole?	How much money is needed ?
<u>Ci vorranno</u> almeno quindici anni	It will take at least fifteen years

2. Volere bene a means 'love.'

I bambini <u>vogliono bene</u> ai genitori	Children love their parents
--	------------------------------------

134. Uses of *da*. *Da* with a measure of time means 'for.'

The present tense is used in this construction to translate the English present perfect (cf. 139, a).

<u>Da quando</u> abita a Livorno?	How long have you been living in Leghorn?
<u>Da</u> undici anni	For eleven years

VOCABULARY

l' <i>ingegno</i> (<i>m.</i>) talent, brains	<i>andò</i> (3 <i>sg. p. abs. of andare, irr.</i>) go
la <i>lotta</i> struggle	<i>ardere, arsi, arso</i> burn
la <i>minaccia</i> threat	<i>attrarre, attraendo, attraggo</i> (<i>irr.</i>),
la <i>miniera</i> mine	<i>attrarrò, attrassi, attratto</i> draw,
l' <i>opera</i> (<i>f.</i>) work	<i>attract</i>
la <i>parte</i> share, part, side	<i>dotare</i> endow
la <i>pietra</i> stone	<i>esiliare</i> exile
	<i>morire, muoio</i> (<i>irr.</i>), <i>morirò, morii,</i>
<i>giovane</i> young	<i>morito</i> die
<i>inesauribile</i> inexhaustible	<i>nāscere, nacqui, nato</i> be born
<i>nuovo</i> new	<i>peregrinare</i> wander, go on pil-
<i>prezioso</i> precious	<i>grimage</i>
<i>vivo</i> alive	<i>prevalere, prevalgo</i> (<i>irr.</i>), <i>prevarrò,</i>
	<i>prevalsi, prevaluto</i> prevail
<i>qualora</i> whenever (<i>w. subj.</i>)	<i>riparare</i> take refuge
<i>seicento</i> six hundred	<i>scoprire, scopersi, scoperto</i> dis-
<i>in età di</i> at the age of	<i>cover; take off one's hat</i>

EXERCISE

I. READING LESSON

DANTE ALIGHIERI

Dante Alighieri, il più grande dei poeti italiani, nacque in Firenze da nobile famiglia nell' anno 1265. Dotato di straordinario ingegno, si diede con ardore agli studi e, giovane ancora, incominciò a poetare. L'amor di patria lo attrasse nelle lotte, che fervevano allora in Firenze tra i Bianchi ed i Neri, e prese parte ad alcune battaglie.

Ma, prevalendo i Neri, il sommo poeta fu esiliato dalla patria non minaccia di essere arso vivo, qualora fosse tornato, e andò peregrinando per l'Italia. Finalmente riparò a Ravenna, dove morì il giorno 14 settembre dell' anno 1321 in età di 56 anni.

Scrisse molte opere; ma il suo lavoro più rinomato è il poema chiamato *Divina Commedia*, che, da seicento anni circa, gl' Italiani

e gli studiosi di tutto il mondo leggono e ammirano, scoprendovi ogni giorno nuove e sublimi bellezze, come in una miniera inesauribile di pietre preziose. Gl' Italiani dicono che Dante è l' uomo più straordinario che Dio abbia mandato sulla Terra.

sapemmo le notizie II *le seppero*
 1. We learned the news yesterday. 2. They learned it this morning. 3. How much time will it take? 4. It will take two months. 5. The Italian authors were born in Florence. 6. The Whites drew Dante into the struggle. 7. I found your newspaper, and gave it to them. 8. We did not take part in the battle. 9. We burned his books. 10. He will wander many years, and will die in Ravenna. 11. The two Americans died in Paris. 12. Who discovered America? 13. The young Italian will show you a precious stone. 14. We gave it to him. 15. John will give it to his sister. 16. The Spaniards burned their house.

LESSON XX

THE DISJUNCTIVE PRONOUN. THE VERB *VENIRE*

135. The Disjunctive Pronoun. The disjunctive pronoun differs from the conjunctive in that it is not, like the latter, inseparable from the verb. It has two cases :

a. The *nominative* (cf. 65), which is used as the subject of the verb, when expressed (cf. 63, *a*).

b. The *objective*, which has various uses. Its forms are as follows :

<i>mè</i> me	<i>nò</i> us
<i>tè</i> thee	<i>vòi</i> you
<i>lui</i> him	<i>loro</i> them (<i>m. and f.</i>)
<i>lei</i> her	
<i>sè</i> (<i>refl.</i>) himself, herself, themselves (<i>m. and f.</i>)	

136. The Objective Case of the disjunctive pronoun is used—

a. After prepositions (cf. 222, a).

Vanno al muŕeo. Andiamo <u>con</u>	They are going to the museum.
loro	Let us go with them
Venga a prēndere il tē <u>da me</u> alle	Come and have tea with me at
cinque	five
La bambina scrisse la lēttēra <u>da sē</u>	The little girl wrote the letter <u>all</u>
	<u>herself</u>

1. Instead of con me, con te, and con se, may be used the forms meco, teco, and seco. Seco is sometimes equivalent, where there is no ambiguity, to con lui or con lei.

Vq a casa. Vien <u>meco</u>	I am going home, come with me
-----------------------------	-------------------------------

b. Hence, after comparatives.

Il suo fratello minore ē <u>più grande</u>	His younger brother is taller than
<u>di lui</u>	he

c. As a substitute for the conjunctive,

1. Where there are two objects in the same construction.

I nōstri genitōri amano <u>tē e me</u>	Our parents love you and me
Parla a lui ed a noi	He speaks to him and to us

2. For clearness, emphasis, or contrast.

L' hanno dato proprio <u>a me</u>	They have given it to me myself, to me in person. (The unem- phatic form would be <i>Me</i> [<i>for</i> <i>Mi</i>] lo hanno dato)
Lodo <u>tē</u> , Giannētta, e biasmo lui.	I praise you, Giannetta, and re- prove him

(a) Sometimes the conjunctive form is retained redundantly:

A me non <u>mi</u> piace l' arte modērna	I do not care for modern art
--	------------------------------

d. In the third person, where the other persons would take the nominative case (cf. 65).

1. When the subject follows the verb, in a declarative sentence.

L'ha fatto lui, or lui stesso He has done it himself

But

L'ho fatto io stesso

2. When the verb is understood.

Lui pittore, lui poeta, lui musicista, He a painter, a poet, a musician,
lui ingegnere, lui architetto! an engineer, an architect!

3. Before Signori, or a cardinal number.

Chè desiderano loro Signori? What do you gentlemen wish?

Loro tre They three

4. After anche, neanche, nemmeno.

Anche loro sono dalla mia They also are on my side
Nemmeno lui è venuto Not even he came

But

Io vorrei viaggiare. Anch'io I should like to travel. So should I

- *e. In exclamations.

Felice lui! Pōvera tē! Happy he! Poor you!

- *f. After come, dove, quanto, salvochè, siccome.

Lēi potrà riuscirci come me You can succeed in it as well as I
Io non sono dotto quanto lui I am not so learned as he

- *g. As a predicate after essere (in Tuscan usage often preceded by in).

S'io fossi tē (in te), non lo farei If I were you, I would not do it
Non avrèbbe voluto esser me (in me), se avesse saputo tutto If he had known everything, he would not have wished to be I
EXCEPTION: Non sono più io I am no more myself, I don't know myself

- *h. In absolute construction, as the subject of the past participle and of the present participle in -ante, -ente. With the form in -ando, -endo, the nominative is preferred. (Cf. 193.)

Venuti loro, cominciammo a parlare di politica When they had come, we began to talk of politics
Vivente me, non lo farai You shall not do it while I live

But

Essendoci io, non völlero parlarne I being there, they refused to speak of it

*i. The disjunctive reflexive, sè, can of course be used only when it represents the same person as the subject.

Va da sè It goes without saying (of itself)

But (since 'Rembrandt' is not the subject)

Un ritratto di Rembrandt, fatto da lui medesimo A portrait of Rembrandt painted by himself

1. When reciprocal, sè is replaced by loro.

Non s'accòrdano fra loro They do not agree among themselves

2. Sè loses its accent before stesso.

Non völle mai parlare di se stesso He would never talk of himself

137. The subjunctive is used after credere meaning 'think' or 'believe.' The future is admissible.

Credo che piova I think it is raining
 Non crede che ci sia io He does not believe I am here

138. The Verb *venire* 'come.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: venire, venendo, vengo, verrò, venni, venuto

PRESENT INDICATIVE

vengo veniamo
vièni venite
viene vengono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

venga veniamo
venga veniate
venga vengano

a. Special uses of **venire** :

1. **Venire** is often used instead of **essere** to construct the passive (cf. 97, a, 1).

Questi desiderî non vênnero compiuti These desires were not fulfilled

2. **Venire** takes a before an infinitive.

Venga a trovarmi alle quattro Come and see me at four

3. **Venire** is used for **andare**, when motion is with or towards the second person.

Verrò, verranno, da Lei domani I shall come, they will come, to your house to-morrow

Handwritten: 7. Longue - Bul-shue
VOCABULARY

il calzino sock	augurare wish, wish well
il caporale corporal	crêdere think, believe, have an opinion
il cartellino sheet, label	impostare post, mail (imposto)
il fazzoletto handkerchief	lodare praise (lôdo)
la fotografia photograph	passare pass, pass as
il francobollo postage stamp	pensare think, reflect; pensare a think of, have in mind
la lana wool	risparmiare save
il nome name (given)	tenere, tēgo (irr. like venire), terrò, tēnni, tenuto hold
il pacco (pl. pacchi) package	
il principio beginning	
appena hardly	affettuoso affectionate
costaggiù down there near you	lontano distant
dunque then, well	postale postal
insieme together	

EXERCISE

I. READING LESSON

NATALE

il 22 dicembre

Caro fratello,

il babbo e la mamma mi hanno detto: scrivi tu a Lucio. Ma come fare che appena so tenere la penna in mano? Ho pregato la signora maestra di aiutarmi, e fra lei e me si è messa insieme questa letterina.

Dunque: a nome di tutti di famiglia ti auguro buon Natale e buon anno.

Riceverai un pacco postale: il babbo ci ha messo i dolci, la mamma i fazzoletti, la Gigina i calzini di lana che ti ha fatti da sé, ed io un bel libro, che ti ho comprato con i denari che risparmio alla scuola coi cartellini dei francobolli.

Sta' allegro il giorno di Natale: noi penseremo a te che sei costaggiù a Tripoli, tanto lontano da noi; ma anche tu pensa a noi, che ti vogliamo bene.

È vero che sei passato caporale? allora fatti la fotografia, e mandacela.

Tanti baci da tutti, un abbraccio dal tuo

aff.^{mo} fratello

Mino

II

1. We shall think about our family on Christmas Day.
2. Shall you think about yours? I am always thinking of it.
3. Buy ten postage-stamps for me, and mail these letters for him.
4. I have mailed them. Many thanks. Don't mention it.
5. What was there in the postal package that Mino's brother received?
6. Mino's brother found in it six handkerchiefs and some woolen socks.
7. Mino says his little sister has made the socks all by herself.
8. Is his sister younger than I?
9. The teacher would not praise

Spanducci Composition first 2 exercises. in part and.

TENSES

§ 139

the letters which the pupils had written, 10. Mino hardly knew how to hold the pen in his hand, and asked the teacher to help him.

11. Between him and me a letter has been put together. 12. My

friend will come with us, but his brothers have returned with them.

13. We shall wish them Merry Christmas and Happy New Year.

14. Does the teacher praise you or him, Giannino? 15. Give me the gun, please. No, I will not give it to you, but to him. 16. We

think our brother and his friend will come on Easter Day.

For Monday: Lesson 31
1. Monday 2. Sunday 3. Sunday...

LESSON XXI

SPECIAL USES OF TENSES. SEQUENCE OF TENSES. AGREEMENT OF VERB AND SUBJECT. INVERSION

139. Present Indicative. a. With a measure of time after *da*, and sometimes in temporal clauses with *dacchè*, the present indicative is used to translate the English present perfect expressing an action begun in the past but continuing into the present (cf. 134).

Siamo in Italia da sei mesi

We have been (and still are) in Italy for six months

Dacchè sono qui

Since I have been here

1. If the action, begun in the past, was continuing at a later date in the past, the English past perfect is to be translated by the past descriptive.

Era ammalato da una settimana

He had been ill a week (and still was so at the time of which I speak)

Combatteremo da più di sei ore

We had been fighting for more than six hours

b. It is used, as in English, of the immediate future.

Parto domani

I leave to-morrow

*c. For vividness of narration it is used, as in Latin and some other languages, for the past; this is known as the *historical present*.

<p>Trovandomi vicino a una stazione, volli fare una corsa per la strada sotterranea. Scendo due o tre scale, e mi trovo tutt' a un tratto sbalzato dal giorno alla notte</p>	<p>Happening near a station, I decided to take a ride on the under- ground railway. I descend two or three steps, and find myself suddenly transported out of day into night</p>
---	---

140. Past Tenses of the Indicative. a. These are not susceptible of really logical analysis. The ~~past absolute de-~~
~~scribes~~ a past action, and translates the English simple past.

Ricevei una lettera ieri	I received a letter yesterday
Morì a Parigi nel 1860	He died in Paris in 1860

b. The present perfect may be used —

1. Generally speaking, to translate the corresponding English tense, expressing an action completed within a period that has not yet expired.

Abbiamo speso tanto denaro.	We have spent much money
Molti soldati sono arrivati questa settimana	Many soldiers have arrived this week

2. For an action completed since midnight.

Stamane ho scritte tre lettere	This morning I wrote three letters
--------------------------------	------------------------------------

3. To describe an action which happened at an unstated time in the past, whose consequences extend into the present.

Ho perduto il mio orologio	I have lost my watch
L' Ariosto ha scritto l' Orlando Furioso	Ariosto wrote the Orlando Furioso
Colombo ha scoperto l' America	Columbus discovered America

NOTE. Outside of Tuscany the distinction between past absolute and present perfect is not carefully enough observed, and foreigners who have studied French are in danger of using the present perfect too much. Still, usage varies with mental attitude, vivid interest, etc.

c. The **past descriptive** is used to express incomplete or habitual action; to describe an action that was taking place when something else occurred; and in description.

Chiacchieravano

They **were chatting**

Noi si andava spesso al teatro l'inverno

We **used to go** often to the theater in winter

Scriveva quando entrai

He **was writing** when I **entered**

Un velo nero cadeva dalle due parti

A black veil **descended on** both sides

Il tempo era cattivo

The weather **was bad**

Il castello era a cavaliere di una valle angusta e serviva di confine ai due stati

The castle **bestrode** a narrow valley, and **acted as** boundary to the two states

1. Cf. 139, a, 1.

*2. It is often found substituted for the past future perfect (especially in bisognare, convenire, dovere, potere) and sometimes for the past subjunctive.

Sarei andato se potevo
Andavo se avessi potuto
Andavo se potevo

*are all
equivalent to*

Sarei andato se avessi potuto
I should have gone if I had been able

d. The **past perfect** translates the English past perfect except where the second past perfect is required (cf. e).

Mentre il frate stava così meditando, Renzo era comparso sull'uscio; ma visto il padre soprapensiero e le donne che facevan cenno di non disturbarlo, si fermò sulla soglia

While the friar **stood** thus in meditation, Renzo **had appeared** at the door; but seeing the holy father in thought, and the women **making** signs not to disturb him, he **stopped** on the threshold

1. Past tenses of nāscere. 'Was born' is variously translated: è nato, of a person still living; era nato, of one recently dead; nacque, of one long dead.

e. The **second past perfect** translates the past perfect —

1. In temporal clauses beginning with **appena**, **quando**, **tostochè**, etc., immediately followed by a principal clause whose verb is in the past absolute.

~~Quando ebbe serrato~~ l'uscio dietro ~~se vide~~ un uomo ritirarsi piano piano, strisciando il muro When he ~~had locked~~ the door behind him, he ~~saw~~ a man withdrawing very softly, skirting the wall

2. In such phrases as this:

~~Fra cinque minuti li ebbe finiti~~ He had them finished in five minutes

NOTE. To temporal clauses with either the past perfect or second past perfect, is very often preferred in actual usage the absolute construction with the participle (cf. 195).

141. The Future Tense. The future tense is used —

a. Contrary to English usage,

1. To indicate possibility or probability; when the action referred to is past, the future becomes future perfect.

~~L'avrò perduto~~ = *ich habe es verloren* I **must** have lost it
~~Saranno le otto~~ *10 u. 10 u. 10 u.* It **must, or may**, be eight o'clock
~~Sarà un'illusione, sarà vero~~ It **may be** true, it **may be** an illusion

2. To indicate actual future time after **quando**, **se**, etc.

~~Quando la vedrò~~, glielo dirò When I **see** her, I shall tell her so

*3. As an alternative to the present subjunctive,

a. To indicate possibility.

~~Bada, che ti brucerai~~ Take care, you **may burn** yourself

b. When the dependent clause refers to future time (169, i, N. 1).

Credo che ~~verranno~~ I think they will come

b. As in English,

*1. Instead of the imperative, in a general precept or when the action is not to be performed immediately.

~~Amerai~~ il prossimo tuo come te stesso Thou shalt love thy neighbor as thyself

142. The Past Future. *a.* The past future is used like the English forms with *should*, *would*, *might*, to express what is uncertain or indefinite in the principal clause.

Potr**è**bb**er**o smar**ri**rsi

They **might** lose their way

X Non mi fare**bb**e specie

It **would** not surprise me

// Si dire**bb**e che fosse pazzo

One **would** say he was mad

b. To express future time in relation to the past tense of a verb of saying, thinking, etc.

Dice che far**à**, dice**va** che fare**bb**e,
il giro del mondo

He **says** he will, he **said** he **would**,
make the tour of the world

1. When the statement made has failed to come true, the past future perfect is required.

X // Dissero che sare**bb**er**o** venuti

They said, they **would** come (but
they did not)

c. In deferential or polite requests.

Vorrei vedere i suoi quadri

I **should** like to see his pictures

d. In a statement reported by hearsay, on the authority of another.

Secon**d**o i n**ost**ri disp**ac**ci, la Ger-
mania **av**re**bb**e dich**ia**rato la
// guerra alla Francia

According to our telegrams, Ger-
many **has** declared war upon
France

e. In the conclusion of conditional sentences (cf. 93).

NOTE. In general, the past future perfect is often used in Italian where English would employ the simple past future.

Ciascuno studi**av**a il luogo do**ve**
// **av**re**bb**e dov**ut**o cacciare la baio-
netta

Each one considered the point
where he **should** **have** to drive his
bayonet

***143. Sequence of Tenses.** If the present or future of the independent clause be changed to a past tense, the present

of the dependent clause is changed to the past descriptive, the present perfect to the past perfect.

Lò lodo perchè fa, ha } fatto, bene	} becomes {	Lo lodavo (or lodai) perchè faceva, aveva fatto, bene
--	-------------	--

a. If the dependent clause states a general truth, the present tense may stand.

Galileo diceva che il mondo si muove	Galileo said that the world moves
--------------------------------------	-----------------------------------

***144. Agreement of Verb with Subject.** a. If there is more than one subject, the verb is plural.

Il monàrchico e il repubblicano non sono d'accordo	The monarchist and the republican do not agree
---	---

1. But if there is close alliance between them, a singular verb may be admitted.

Grande è la fiera e la voracità della talpe	The temerity and voracity of the mole are considerable
--	---

2. Two or more singular subjects of the third person connected by **o** take a singular verb.

L'uno o l'altro verrà senza fallo	One or other of them will come without fail
-----------------------------------	--

3. Singular subjects connected by **con** or **nè** may take the verb in the singular or plural.

Non verrà, verranno, nè l'uno nè l'altro	Neither the one nor the other will come
---	--

La zia colla nipote partì, partirono, <u>sul far del giorno</u>	The aunt with the niece departed at daybreak
--	---

b. If the subjects are of different persons, the verb agrees with the first person in preference to the second, with the second in preference to the third.

Lo duca ed io per quel cammino ascoso Entrammo [DANTE]	The leader and I entered upon that secret way
---	--

Tu e lui siete dalla mia	You and he are on my side
--------------------------	---------------------------

c. The verb of a relative clause agrees in person and number with the antecedent.

Voi, che intendendo il terzo ciel You who by understanding move
movete the third heaven

d. Collective nouns take a plural verb usually, if followed by a plural noun in a phrase with **di**.

La maggior **parte degli** Italiani The majority of the Italians wished
desideravano la libertà for liberty

***145. Inversion of Verb and Subject.** The subject frequently follows the verb in Italian, there being no hard and fast rule about it. Such inversion may occur —

a. In interrogative sentences (cf. 62, *b*), unless beginning with an interrogative pronoun.

b. With impersonal or third-person (cf. 164, *d*) verbs.

Ci mancano dieci minuti alle otto It lacks ten minutes to eight
Ce ne sono tanti There are so many of them

c. For emphasis or contrast.

L' ha detto anche lei *She* said so too
S' egli mi parlava una lingua che If he spoke to me in a language I
io non capivo, io potevo bene did not understand, I might well
parlargli una lingua che non speak to him in a language *he*
capisse lui would not understand

d. With participles in the absolute construction (cf. 136, *h*).

// Parlando tu, tutti stanno attenti When you talk, every one gives
heed

e. In exhortations, wishes, or imprecations.

^x // Ci fossi tu! If you were only here!
Lo ricompensi Iddio! May God reward him!

f. In relative clauses and indirect questions.

Le mostrerò il gioiello che m'ha dato lo zio	I'll show you the jewel my uncle gave me
Domando dove sono le seconde classi	I ask where the second-class places are

g. In sentences introduced by adverbial phrases.

Dal fondo della escavazione centrale si partono le gallerie secondarie	From the end of the central excavation start the secondary galleries
Nel 1817 capitò a Venezia un viaggiatore inglese	In 1817 there happened to come to Venice an English traveler

h. With verbs which take the dative of the person.

Le dispiace la notizia	The news causes her pain
Gli tremavano le labbra	His lips trembled

i. When the subject or predicate has long modifying clauses, which should logically be placed near it.

Quale uomo fosse il Thouar, quanto l'Italia gli debba, come in lui s'accoppiasse alla lucidità della mente la bontà del cuore, dice in questo volume il biografo con autorità che non è dato ad alcuno di pareggiare	What kind of man Thouar was, how much Italy owes him, how in him goodness of heart was united to clearness of mind, the biographer tells in this volume with an authority which it is given to no one else to equal
--	---

j. In general, in narrative style and in conversation, to avoid pedantry, or to emphasize the verb.

Venne subito la disfatta di Novara	The defeat of Novara came soon after
È morto il papa	The pope is dead

k. The subject may follow both verb and predicate nominative.

Era presidente del Consiglio Massimo d'Azeglio	Massimo d'Azeglio was President of the Council
--	--

VOCABULARY

l' allōdola (f.) lark	agguantare possess oneself of
il brano scrap, fragment; fare a brani tear to pieces	appollaiarsi roost, lodge
la civiltà civilization	avventarsi (a) fall (upon)
il falco (pl. -chi) hawk, falcon	cacciare hunt, drive out
la fatica (pl. -che) fatigue	succhiare suck
il nonno grandfather	dopoche (conj.) after
il pezzo piece	dovesse 3 sg. p. subj. of dovere
il resto remainder, rest	fecero 3 pl. p. abs. of fare
il risorgimento resurrection	già already
il secolo century	nonostante che (with subj.) notwithstanding that
lo straniero stranger, alien	per uno apiece
il suolo soil	qualche some (indef. adj. w. sg. n.)
altro other	sotto under
	via (adv.) away

EXERCISE

I

UN PO' DI STORIA DEL RISORGIMENTO ITALIANO

Nonostante che la nostra Italia dovesse essere sacra per gli uomini di tutto il mondo dopochè da essa avevano imparato le arti, le scienze, le industrie e la civiltà sotto tutte le forme, gli stranieri, in altri tempi, l' hanno sempre guardata come i falchi guardano le allodole: per avventarcisi, per farla a brani e per agguantarsene un pezzo per uno.

E disgraziatamente per noi, non si contentarono di guardarla, ma fecero anche il resto.

Voi, ragazzi italiani, avrete già qualche idea di quello che i vostri nonni e i vostri babbi hanno fatto per cacciar via dal nostro suolo i vampiri che da secoli vi s' erano appollaiati per succhiargli il sangue.

Ora i vampiri se ne sono andati. Ma quante fatiche, quanti pericoli e quanti morti!

II

(Involves 139, 140, 141, 142)

1. The duke possessed himself of the state. 2. If many Italians had not fought for their country, they would not have driven out the alien from their soil. 3. He read my letter after I had written it for the second time. 4. Your grandfathers drove out the strangers from Italy, because they had sucked her blood for centuries. 5. According to the letter I received this morning, my mother has returned to Paris. 6. This is the shortest letter I have ever received from her. 7. The palace of the stranger was larger than the house which was near it. 8. Hawks fall upon the other birds. 9. The Spaniard said he would come before noon, but he has not yet arrived. 10. Where is my umbrella? I must have left it in that compartment. 11. We were talking of John's pupil when he entered. 12. We used to see her every week last winter, but we have not seen her this year. 13. When he had bought the tickets, he put them in his pocket. 14. When I arrive at my grandfather's I shall find the others there.

LESSON XXII

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE. THE VERB ANDARE

146. The Definite Article. The definite article is used far more in Italian than in English. It is used where it would not be in English —

- a. Before the possessive adjective (cf. 107, 108).
- b. Before abstract nouns and nouns denoting a whole class (cf. 73, a).
- c. Before family names of men; often, especially to imply familiarity or affection, before given names of women; rarely before given names of men, when referring to a character

or to the man's works; sometimes before the surnames of women, to indicate fame or familiarity.

Il Tasso passò sette anni in prigione a Ferrara Tasso spent seven years in prison at Ferrara

La Lauretta è una brava bambina Laura is a capable little girl

L'Amleto dello Shakespeare Shakespeare's Hamlet

Ha molto studiato il Dante He has studied Dante (the works of Dante) a great deal

La piccola Bugiani The little Bugiani girl

La Duse Duse, the great actress

1. When men's surnames, as Garibaldi's, are in very familiar and affectionate use, the article would be an affectation.

d. Before names of continents, countries, and provinces; and names of lakes, islands, mountains, and rivers (except Arno).

L'Australia è molto lontana dall'Europa Australia is very far from Europe

Viva l'Italia! Long live Italy!

1. After in meaning 'in' or 'to' a country it is omitted with names ending in a (unless modified).

Resteremo tutta l'estate in Italia We shall remain all summer in Italy

But

Stetti due mesi nel Belgio. I stayed two months in Belgium

È mai stato nel Giappone? Have you ever been in Japan?

Avēvano passato l'inverno nella Francia meridionale They had spent the winter in southern France

2. It is omitted likewise after di, when preposition and noun are equivalent to an adjective of nationality (cf. 147, d).

Il re d'Inghilterra The king of England, the English king

Vini di Francia French wines

3. A few names of cities require the article, such as l' *Aja* 'the Hague,' il *Cairo* 'Cairo,' la *Spezia* 'Spezia,' etc.

4. Among names of islands which do not take the article are *Creta* 'Crete,' *Cipro* 'Cyprus,' *Rodi* 'Rhodes.'

5. Instead of the possessive: with parts of the body or clothing, or some names of relatives; in general, where the idea of possession is intimate and there cannot be ambiguity (cf. 109); sometimes with *ne* to translate 'its' (cf. 107, c).

<i>Si levò l'impermeabile</i>	He took off his raincoat
<i>I capelli gli scendevano fin sulle spalle</i>	His hair fell down to his shoulders
<i>Come sta la mamma?</i>	How is your mother?

1. Likewise after *avere*, of personal characteristics.

<i>Egli ha gli occhi azzurri</i>	He has blue eyes
<i>Ella ha le mani piccole</i>	She has small hands

*2. In poetic usage this may be in an adverbial accusative construction.

<i>Poggiati il ginocchio allo scudo</i>	Leaning their knees against their shields
---	---

f. Before the number of the year or the hour, or the name of a particular month.

<i>Il Petrarca nacque nel 1304</i>	Petrarch was born in 1304
<i>Verrò da Lei alle cinque</i>	I shall come to your house at five
<i>Nell'ottobre dell'anno scorso</i>	In October of last year

g. Distributively,

1. In expressing measure.

<i>Hò pagato questa seta cinque lire il metro</i>	I paid five francs a meter for this silk
---	--

2. With days of the week, to mean 'every.'

<i>La mia maestra d'italiano viene da me il mercoledì</i>	My Italian teacher comes to me on Wednesdays, or every Wednesday
---	---

a. Without article, the name of a day of the week may be understood to refer to the last or the next one.

Lo vidi lunedì

I saw him on **Monday, last Monday**

h. Before a title followed by a proper name, in 3d person.

È arrivata **la** regina Elena nel suo yacht Queen Helen arrived in her yacht

È in casa **la** Signora Casagrande? Is Mrs. Casagrande at home?

i. Before any other part of speech used as a noun.

~~Me~~ Mi duole il dirlo

It pains me to say it

~~He~~ Rifiutò di dirmi il perché

He refused to tell me the reason

~~He~~ Pensava con grande sgomento al

I thought with great anxiety of

~~He~~ come avrei fatto a pagare

how I should manage to pay

j. In forming the superlative degree (cf. 116).

**k.* In a number of idiomatic phrases :

Dare il buon giorno

To say good morning

~~He~~ Dire le bugie

To tell lies

~~He~~ Fare il Natale

To keep Christmas

~~He~~ Fare le scuse

To make excuses

1. Many such phrases take the feminine article alone, with a noun, presumably *cosa*, understood. (Or this may be considered the feminine conjunctive pronoun, replacing *la cosa*.)

~~He~~ Averla con

To have a grudge against

Darla vinta a

To surrender

~~He~~ Darsiela con

To be congenial to

~~He~~ Dirla schietta

To speak frankly

~~He~~ Farla da padrone

To act arrogantly, play the master

~~He~~ Farla finita

To make an end of it

~~He~~ Io la veggio brutta

It looks bad to me

~~He~~ Legarsela al dito

To hold a grudge

~~He~~ Saperla lunga

To know all about it

147. The Definite Article is Omitted —

a. In the vocative, and after a pronominal adjective or a numeral.

S' accōmodi, Signore. Il signōre	Sit down, sir. The gentleman sits
s' accōmoda	down
Questo lume	This lamp
Due scodēlle	Two soup-plates

b. In proverbs.

Cōsa fatta capo ha	A thing done has an end, is ended
--------------------	-----------------------------------

c. In enumerations, if summed up collectively.

Nōbili, popolani, contadini, uōmini, dōnne, tutti s' affollavano allo scalo	Nobles, populace, peasants, men, women, everybody was throng- ing down to the landing-place
---	---

d. With *di*, to indicate material, contents, intimate characteristics, or nationality.

Il vestito di sēta	The silk dress
Il bicchiē d' acqua	The glass of water
Il maēstro d' italiano	The Italian teacher
La cioccolata di Svizzera	Swiss chocolate
Una moltitūdine di pellegrini	A multitude of pilgrims

***e.** In many set phrases, such as

A lētto	In bed
A scuola	At school
Barca a remi	Rowboat
Da mane a sera	From morning till night
Di giorno, di notte	By day, by night
Di settembre	In September
In casa	At home
In città	In town
In pièdi	On one's feet
Uōmo di giudizio	Man of judgment, good behavior

***148. Agreement of Definite Article with Two or more Nouns.**

a. In a series of substantives of the same number and gender, the article may be used with one alone.

Le montagne, valli e piagge della Riviera italiana sono bellissime *The mountains, valleys, and coasts of the Italian Riviera are most beautiful*

But

Le montagne ed i ghiacci della Svizzera *The mountains and glaciers of Switzerland*

149. The Verb *andare* 'go.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *andare, andando, vado, anderò or andrò, andai, andato*

PRESENT INDICATIVE		PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE	
<i>vado, or vq</i>	<i>andiamo</i>	<i>vada</i>	<i>andiamo</i>
<i>vai</i>	<i>andate</i>	<i>vada</i>	<i>andiate</i>
<i>va</i>	<i>vanno</i>	<i>vada</i>	<i>vādano</i>

For the imperative, cf. 130, *e*.

a. Special uses of *andare*.

1. *Andare* takes *a* before the infinitive. To 'go and' is translated *andare a*.

Andrò a comprare della carta da scrivere *I shall go and buy some writing-paper*

2. *Andare* with the present participle translates the verb 'be,' with an additional idea of a process of change (cf. 102).

Va crescendo a poco a poco *It is growing little by little*

3. With the past participle, it makes a passive carrying the additional idea of obligation or propriety (cf. 97, *a*, 1).

I ragazzi italiani non vanno mandati soli a scuola *Italian boys are never sent to school unaccompanied*
Questo non va messo qui *This isn't to be put here*

*b. Idioms with *andare*.

Andare a cavallo	To go on horseback
Andare in collera	To become angry
Andare dietro a	To be inferior to; to follow
Andare in êstasi	To go into ecstasies
Andare fuori	To go out
Andare a pièdi	To go on foot
Andar superbo	To be proud
A lungo andare	In the long run

VOCABULARY

il caffè coffee	andare a cavallo ride horseback
la conoscenza acquaintance	andare a pièdi go on foot
il figlio son	aprire, apersi, aperto open
la figlia daughter	aver piacere di be pleased to
il latte milk	conoscere, conobbi, conosciuto be
Milano Milan	acquainted with, meet, become
Nāpoli Naples	acquainted with
il principe prince	dar fuoco a set fire to
la principessa princess	dar la buona notte etc. say good
la regina queen	night etc.
il romanzo novel	dar noia a annoy
la seta silk	dar pensiero a worry (tr.)
come al solito as usual	incontrare meet, run across
per il solito usually	presentare introduce
in/casa at home	restare stay, remain
fuori out	sperare hope
or ora just now	chiudere, chiusi, chiuso close
quest' altro next, coming	

EXERCISE

I

1. È in casa la Signorina Conti? No, Signora, è andata fuori.
2. Buon giorno, Signora. Mi permetta di presentarle il Signor Orselli.
3. Ho piacere di far la Sua conoscenza.
4. Dove sono le Sue figlie? Perchè non sono venute con Lei?
5. Sono andate in

Francia. Ci resteranno due mesi, e passeranno l'estate in Inghilterra. 6. Dove ha conosciuto il Signor Pisani? A Napoli. Conosco lui e sua sorella. 7. Conosce il nuovo romanzo del Fogazzaro? Desidero di comprarlo. 8. Dove va, Signorina? Vado da mia zia. Spero che sarà in casa. 9. Non ci sarà. L'ho vista or ora in Via Cavour. 10. Andiamo a trovarla. L'incontreremo per la strada. 11. Ha sentito che il Bianchi è andato in Inghilterra? 12. Sono andata questa mattina dalla mia maestra d'inglese. 13. Ci vo il martedì e il venerdì, e pago tre lire la lezione. 14. Come si chiama la regina d'Italia? Si chiama la regina Elena. 15. Ha visto la principessa Vittoria? Ha gli occhi neri, e le mani molto piccole. 16. Andai la settimana scorsa a fare il Natale da mio cognato. 17. L'Italia è la nostra patria. 18. Di giugno si va per il solito in campagna, e si torna di settembre in città. 19. Non si dia pensiero. 20. Leggevo il famoso romanzo del Manzoni quando venne la mia amica a trovarmi. 21. Le do noia se apro la finestra? L'aveva chiusa or ora. 22. Desidera una tazza di caffè e latte?

II

1. We usually came into town in October. 2. America is larger than Europe. 3. Manzoni was a writer of Italy. He was born in Milan. 4. We opened the door, as usual, but they closed it. 5. Orselli has gone to France. He will stay three weeks with Count Costa. 6. Let me introduce you to Princess Porciani. 7. Have the soldiers set fire to our house? 8. I should have opened the window of the compartment, but it would have annoyed one of the passengers. 9. Is Mrs. B. at home? No, miss, she has gone out. 10. Did she go on foot? No, she went on horseback. 11. This news worries us. 12. The children came and said good-morning to their teacher. 13. I wish to read Fogazzaro's best novel. 14. Having read it, I shall talk of it to my friends. 15. Where did you meet Miss C.? I am not acquainted with her. 16. Permit me to introduce to you Mr. B. 17. I am happy to make your acquaintance.

18. We were reading, when they came and said good morning to us. 19. Bring me a glass of milk. 20. Here is my cousin's silk dress. 21. When I go to her house I shall carry it to her. 22. Where are your books, Lauretta? Go and find them.

III

L' ARRIVO IN UNA STAZIONE FERROVIARIA ITALIANA

Si arriva a Firenze. Un lungo fischio, il treno rallenta, poi si ferma alla stazione. State pensando commosso a tutto quello che avete a vedere in questa bellissima città; ma queste emozioni sono interrotte bruscamente dagli altri viaggiatori che cominciano a buttar giù i loro bagagli dalla rete, con gran pericolo di farvi male. Quelli che li hanno già in mano si sporgono allo sportello, chiamando: — Facchino! — Se hanno la fortuna di trovarne uno pronto, lo caricano di tanti sacchi, tante valigie, tante borse, da farlo parere più ciuco che uomo. Vi mena all' uscita dove dovete dare il vostro biglietto all' impiegato, poichè in Italia si deve renderlo non solo all' entrata in treno ma anche all' uscire dalla stazione. È il facchino che vi trova una carrozza, o un legno, come si chiama a Firenze. Ci mette tutta la vostra roba e vi salite anche voi. Poi gli dite di andare nel bagagliaio per ritirarne il vostro baule, dandogli la bolletta. Mentre che lo aspettate, vedete uscire dalla stazione tanta gente frettolosa, affollata, occupata a chiamarsi, a urtarsi, a stringersi la mano, baciandosi sulle gotte anche gli uomini, che è un piacere a vederli. Ecco il vostro facchino col baule su un carretto. In un attimo il baule è sulla vettura, e al facchino che sta in aspettativa davanti a voi, si dà una mancia che non basta mai. Per quanto generosa sia, egli vi guarderà con una espressione commovente, e vi dirà: — Ma . . . è poco! — Bisogna fare l' orecchio da mercante e tirar via per le strade rumorose, fino al Lungarno dove sta il vostro albergo.

LESSON XXIII

CARDINAL NUMERALS. DATES, TIME, AGE. MONEY.
MEASUREMENT. THE VERB *MORIRE*

150. The Cardinal Numerals are —

1 uno	21 ventuno	100 cento
2 due	22 ventidue	101 centuno
3 tre	23 ventitré	102 centodue
4 quattro	24 ventiquattro	160 centosessanta
5 cinque	25 venticinque	180 centottanta
6 sei	26 ventisei	200 dugento
7 sette	27 ventisette	600 seicento
8 otto	28 ventotto	800 ottocento
9 nove	29 ventinove	1000 mille
10 dieci	30 trenta	1001 mille uno
11 undici	31 trentuno	2000 duemila
12 dodici	32 trentadue	20,000 ventimila
13 tredici	38 trentotto	
14 quattordici	39 trentanove	
15 quindici	40 quaranta	
16 sedici	50 cinquanta	
17 diciassette	60 sessanta	
18 diciotto	70 settanta	
19 diciannove	80 ottanta	
20 venti	90 novanta	

a. Uno has a feminine *una*, and when used adjectively has the forms of the indefinite article (cf. 59, 60).

Uno scopo, una patria, un dio One purpose, one fatherland, one God

1. With *ventuno*, *trentuno*, etc., used adjectively, the noun should be in the singular when it follows the numeral, in the plural when it precedes, the numeral agreeing in gender only.

Trentun soldati, soldati trentuno Thirty-one soldiers

Centuna lira, lire centuna One hundred and one lire

b. With **cento** and **mille** the indefinite article is not used. The plural of **mille** is **mila**.

Centò uòmini e *mille* cavalli

A hundred men and a thousand horses

c. 'Eleven hundred,' 'twelve hundred,' etc., must be translated 'one thousand one hundred' etc.

La prima crociata ebbe luogo circa
il **millecento**

The First Crusade took place about
1100

La guèrra civile americana in-
cominciò nel **milleottocento**
sessantuno

The American Civil War began
in 1861

d. 'Both' = **tutti e due**, **tutt' e due**; 'all three' = **tutti e tre**; etc. If a noun follows, it takes the article.

Tutt' e due gli amici

Both (the) friends

e. The numerals above twenty may be written as one word or as two except when the digit is one or eight, when they must be written as one.

Ventidue, venti due; quarantuno; sessantotto; trenta sei, trentasei

f.* **Cento may be written **cen** when followed by a numeral not accented upon the first syllable.

Cendiciassette, cénquaranta; *but* cénioseì, céntoventi, cénosèdici

151. Dates. *a.* For the days of the month, except the first (which takes the ordinal, **primo**), the cardinals are used, preceded by the definite article. Both article and numeral precede the name of the month.

Il quattro gennaio, *il 25* giugno
Il primo agosto

January fourth, the 25th of June
The first of August

1. A more stately form inserts the word **di** 'day.' (And for the occasional use of the form **il** in dates, cf. **71, d.**)

Il di (or *addì*) sei di marzo

The sixth of March

b. The definite article precedes the number of the year (cf. 146, f).

Lo Shakespeare morì nel 1616 Shakespeare died in 1616

c. The number of a century expressed in cardinals serves to indicate the century following (cf. 157, c). **Mille** is often dropped.

Il trecento, il milletrecento	The fourteenth century — <i>lit.</i> the 'three hundreds,' the 'thirteen hundreds'
Il dugento, l'ottocento	The thirteenth century, the nineteenth century

d. 'Ago' is expressed by **fa**, **sono**, or **or sono**, following a measure of time.

Due mesi fa	Two months ago
Anni sono	Years ago
Cento anni or sono	A hundred years ago

***e.** Idiomatic phrases :

Otto giorni	A week
Quindici giorni	A fortnight
Oggi a otto	A week from to-day
Doman l'altro	The day after to-morrow
Ier l'altro, l'altro ieri	The day before yesterday
Ogni tre giorni	Every three days
Un giorno sì, un giorno no	Every other day
Quanti ne abbiamo del mese?	What day of the month is it?
Quanti ne abbiamo?	
A' quanti siamo del mese?	
Ne abbiamo tre	It is the third
È il tre	
Siamo ai tre	
Ai tanti del mese	On such a day of the month
A' quanti del mese parte?	On <u>what day of the month</u> does he leave?
Nella prima metà di maggio	In the first half of May

Ai primi di ottobre	In the first days of October
L'anno scorso di luglio	In July of last year
Fra due mesi	Within two months, two months from now
✓ L'ebbe finito in due mesi	He had it finished within two months
Da due anni	For two years past
Anno	
L'alt' anno	Last year, a year ago
Oggi è l'anno	A year ago to-day
Anno di là	Year before last
Da qui allora	From now until then

152. Time of Day. a. With numerals indicating the time of day, the definite article precedes, and both article and verb agree with *ora*, *ore*, understood.

Sono le tre	It is three o'clock
Erano le undici e mezzo	It was half-past eleven
Vada alle cinque	Go at five

b. In time-tables, and increasingly in general usage, the hours after noon are counted from midnight.

Il treno parte alle diciassette e arriva alle ventidue	The train leaves at 5 P.M. and arrives at 10 P.M.
--	---

1. A.M. and P.M. may be expressed by the adjectives ante-meridiano and pomeridiano, modifying *ore* understood.

Va dalla maestra alle dieci ante-meridiane	She goes to her teacher at ten in the morning
--	---

c. 'One o'clock' is *il tocco* in good Tuscan usage, though *l'una* is used elsewhere.

Il tocco di notte	One o'clock at night
La colazione si serve al tocco	Luncheon is served at one

d. 'Noon' is *mezzogiorno*, and means twelve o'clock precisely; *mezzanotte* is 'midnight.'

***e. Idiomatic phrases :**

☞ Che ore sono?	What time is it?
Sono le cinque passate	It is after five
☞ È la mezza	It is half-past
☞ Suonano le due	It is striking two
☞ Quanto c'è alle nove?	How near is it to nine?
Ci mancano dieci minuti alle nove	It lacks ten minutes to nine
Sono le dodici e mezzo	It is half-past twelve
☞ Di quanto sono passate le dieci?	How long after ten is it?
☞ Le dieci sono passate da tanto	It is some time after ten
A che ora devo venire?	At what time shall I come?
Verso le sette	About seven
Sono le due meno un quarto	It is a quarter before two
Sono le otto e dieci	It is ten minutes past eight
Stamane, stasera	This morning, this evening
Stanotte	Last night (until noon; after noon it means 'to-night')

☞ **153. Age.** Age is expressed by means of the verb **avere** with **anni**.

☞ Quanti anni hai?	How old are you?
Hq sette anni	I am seven years old

☞ **a.** In speaking of an infant or an animal, **tempo** replaces **anni**.
 ☞ Quanto tempo ha questo bimbo? How old is this baby?

154. Money. The Italian system is decimal, based upon the **lira**, which, like the French franc, is equivalent to nearly 20 cents.

$$5 \text{ centesimi} = 1 \text{ soldo} = \text{about } 1 \text{ cent}$$

$$100 \text{ centesimi} = 20 \text{ soldi} = 1 \text{ lira}$$

***155. Measurement.** Italians use the metric system. The **metro** equals nearly forty inches, and the **centimetro** is the 100th part of a **metro**. An inch equals about $2\frac{1}{2}$ **centimetri**. The **chilometro** is a long half-mile; the **chilogramma** (masculine) a generous two pounds; the **litro** about a quart.

<i>lungo</i> Ho pagato questo nastro una lira il metro	I paid twenty cents a yard for this ribbon
<i>6 1/2</i> Queste buste sono lunghe quindici centimetri	These envelopes are six inches long
<i>1, 4 m</i> Una stanza della lunghezza di sei metri e della larghezza di quattro metri	A room six meters long by four meters wide

156. The Verb *morire* 'die.'PRINCIPAL PARTS: *morire, morendo, muoio, morrò, morii, morto*

PRESENT INDICATIVE

muoio	moriame
muori	morite
muore	muoiono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

muoia	moriame
muoia	moriare
muoia	muoiano

VOCABULARY

le armi	arms (weapons)	le truppe	troops
il bimbo	baby	Vittorio Emanuele	Victor Emmanuel
il carbonaro	charcoal-burner		
il consigliere	adviser	accordarsi	agree (accord)
Cristoforo Colombo	Christopher Columbus	coprire, copersi, coperto	cover
il fulmine	thunderbolt	dirigere, dirersi, diretto	direct
il galantuomo	honest man	fallire	fail
l'indipendenza	f. independence	istituire	found, establish
il moto	movement	preparare	prepare
Petrarca	Petrarch	ardito	bold
il politico	statesman	dolorosamente	sorrowfully
il re	king	faticoso	laborious
il segreto	secret	rivoluzionario	revolutionary

EXERCISE

I

1. Quegl' Italiani che per i primi si diedero alla faticosa opera di cacciare lo straniero erano i più intelligenti, i più buoni e i più arditi d' Italia. 2. Ma erano pochi e senza armi. 3. Bisognava accordarsi in segreto. 4. Istituirono nel 1820 la società segreta,

così detta, dei Carbonari. 5. I primi moti rivoluzionari preparati da questa società cominciarono a Napoli. 6. Ma dolorosamente fallirono! 7. La liberazione d'Italia fu l'opera di moltissimi eroi. 8. Li diressero quattro grandi uomini: uno scrittore, un re, un soldato, e un uomo politico. 9. Il Mazzini, il grande agitatore, nacque nel 1805 e morì nel 1872; aveva 67 anni. 10. Vittorio Emanuele II, il re galantuomo, nacque il 14 marzo, 1820, e morì il 9 gennaio, 1878. 11. Garibaldi, quel fulmine di guerra, nacque nel 1807 e morì nel 1882. 12. Il conte Cavour, il consigliere del re, nacque nel 1810 e morì nel 1861. 13. Vittorio Emanuele, re di Piemonte, fu dichiarato re d'Italia il 18 febbraio, 1861. 14. Le truppe italiane entrarono vittoriose in Roma il 20 settembre, 1870. 15. In che giorno nacque Dante Alighieri?

II

1. In what year was Petrarch born? In 1304. 2. In what year did he die? In 1374. 3. There is a poor man. If I had forty-one lire, I would give them to him. 4. What day of the month is it today? It is the 17th. 5. Christopher Columbus discovered America in 1492. 6. They wish me to leave at 7.30 P.M. 7. How old is your father? He is fifty; he was born fifty years ago. 8. How many books have you? I have more than a thousand. 9. At what time to-morrow shall I return to your house? At a quarter past eight in the evening. 10. The Spaniard died last month in Paris. He was born in 1872, and was forty-three years old. 11. Shakespeare was born in 1564 and died in 1616. 12. How old was he when he died? He was fifty-two. 13. What time is it? It is twenty minutes past ten. It lacks ten minutes to eleven. 14. How old is this baby? He is three months old; he was born on the twenty-eighth of March. 15. The author died on the twenty-third of January, 1913, at two o'clock in the morning. 16. On what day did King Victor Emmanuel die?

LESSON XXIV

ORDINALS. COLLECTIVES. MULTIPLICATIVES.
INDETERMINATES. THE VERB *PARERE*

157. **Ordinals.** The ordinal numerals are —

1st	primo	20th	{ ventēſimo
2d	ſecondo		{ vigēſimo
3d	terzo	21st	{ ventunēſimo
4th	quarto		{ ventēſimo primo
5th	quinto	22d	{ ventiduēſimo
6th	ſeſto		{ ventēſimo ſecondo
7th	ſettimo		<i>etc.</i>
8th	ottavo	30th	trentēſimo
9th	nono	40th	quarantēſimo
10th	dēcimo	50th	cinquantēſimo
	{ undēcimo	60th	ſeſſantēſimo
11th	{ undicēſimo	70th	ſettantēſimo
	{ dēcimo primo	80th	ottantēſimo
	{ duodēcimo	90th	novantēſimo
12th	{ dodicēſimo	100th	centēſimo
	{ dēcimo ſecondo	101st	centēſimo primo
	{ tredicēſimo	102d	centēſimo ſecondo
13th	{ dēcimo terzo		<i>etc.</i>
	{ quattordicēſimo	130th	centotrentēſimo
14th	{ dēcimo quarto	170th	centoſettantēſimo
	{ quindicēſimo	200th	dugentēſimo
15th	{ dēcimo quinto	500th	cinquecentēſimo
	{ ſedicēſimo	600th	ſecentēſimo
16th	{ dēcimo ſeſto	1000th	millēſimo
	{ diciſettēſimo	1001st	millēſimo primo
17th	{ dēcimo ſettimo		<i>etc.</i>
	{ diciottēſimo	2000th	duemillēſimo
18th	{ dēcimo ottavo	30,000th	trentamillēſimo
	{ diciannovēſimo	100,000th	centomillēſimo
19th	{ dēcimo nono		

a. The ordinals are adjectives, and agree as such.

La quarantēſima pāgina The fortieth page

b. Fractions except the half are expressed by ordinals.

Cinque miglia e tre quarti Five and three-quarters miles

1. 'Half' is translated as an adjective by *mezzo*, as a noun by *la metà*. *Mezzo* agrees when it precedes.

Mangiò <i>mezza</i> la pera	He ate half the pear
Una <i>mezz'</i> ora	A half hour
Sono le tre e <i>mezzo</i>	It is half-past three
Ne prese <i>la metà</i>	He took half of it

c. The number of the century may be expressed by ordinals (cf. 151, c).

Il sēcolo dēcimo quarto The fourteenth century

d. Numerical titles of rulers, and of volumes, chapters, etc., are indicated by the ordinals following, without article.

Carlo quinto	Charles the Fifth
Luigi dēcimosēsto	Louis XVI
Capitolo tērzo	Chapter three

e. Ordinals precede cardinals in such phrases as

I primi sei canti The first six cantos

***158. Collectives. a.** The commonest are —

una coppia a couple	un milione a million
un paio a pair	un miliardo a billion (U.S.), thou-
una decina half a score	sand millions (Eng.)
una dozzina a dozen	un bilione a trillion (U.S.), billion
una ventina a score	(Eng.)
un centinaio about a hundred	ambedue, entrambi both
un migliaio about a thousand	

1. 'About' so many may be indicated by *da* or *un* before a cardinal.

Da seicento	About six hundred
Un settanta	About seventy

circa duecento

b. Collectives with special meanings :

1. *Games*: *ambo*, *terno*, *quaderno*, *cinquina*, 'a two,' 'a three,' etc., in the lottery, or certain games of cards.

2. *Paper*: *un quaderno*, *un quinterno*, a packet of four, of five sheets.

3. *Time*: *centenario* 'centenary'; *triduo*, *novena*, *quarantena*, periods of three, nine, forty days; *bimestre*, *trimestre*, *quadrimestre*, *semestre*, periods of two, three, four, six months; *biennio*, *triennio*, *quinquennio*, *sessennio*, *decennio*, *centennio*, *millennio*, periods of two, three, etc. years.

4. *Versification*: *La terzina* or *il terzetto*, *la quartina*, *la sestina*, *l'ottava*, etc., three-, four-, six-, or eight-versed stanzas; *quadernario*, *quinario*, *senario*, *ottonario*, etc., four-, five-, six-, or eight-syllabled verses.

5. *Binario* is used of the two rails of a railway-track.

***159. Multiplicatives.** a. Multiplicatives are the adjectives (also used substantively) *doppio* 'double,' *triplo* 'triple,' *quadruplo* 'quadruple,' *quintuplo* 'fivefold,' *sestuplo* 'sixfold,' *centuplo* 'one hundredfold,' etc. Similar forms may be constructed with *volte* 'times.'

Una scatola a <i>doppio</i> fondo	A double-bottomed box
◦ Dōdici è il <i>triplo</i> di quattro	Twelve is three times four
La mia parte era <i>dieci volte</i> più grande della sua	My share was ten times as great as his
◦ Due <i>alla volta</i>	Two at a time

1. The similar forms *dāplice*, *trīplice*, etc. are used only as adjectives, and only of abstract things.

La *Trīplice* Alleanza

The Triple Alliance

b. Arithmetical processes :

Cinque via cinque, venticinque	Five times five are twenty-five
Due e due fanno quattro	Two and two make four
Dieci meno cinque, cinque	Ten minus five leaves five

160. Indeterminate Numerals. These are **molto**, **poco**, **troppo**, **tutto**, **tanto**, **quanto**, and **parecchi** (f. **parecchie**) 'several.' When used as adjectives, they agree, and dispense with the article (except **tutto**, cf. **c**). When used substantively, the masculine singular is abstract and neuter in meaning, while the masculine plural refers to persons. For their use as adverbs, cf. **89, b**.

Ho troppo cose da fare	I have too many things to do
Spēde poco	He spends little
Parecchie donne avevano paura	Several women were afraid
Molti hanno abbandonato la città	Many have abandoned the city

***a. Molto.** Tuscan usage sanctions **di** before **molto**.

Ha perduto il denaro, e ne aveva di molto	He has lost his money, and he had a great deal
<i>2. allora di molto</i>	<i>He lost a great deal</i>

b. Poco. Preceded by **un** it means 'a little,' and is often shortened to **po'**; it is used adverbially in this form to mean 'just.' In the plural it means 'few,' 'a few.'

Mi dia un po' di pane	Give me a little bread
Pochi la pensano come me	Few are of my opinion
Dimmi un po'	Just tell me

c. Tutto used adjectively precedes the article and the noun, unless it follows both. The article is required.

Tutti gli uomini	All men, all the men
Gli uccelli tutti	All birds, all the birds

1. In the singular it may mean 'whole.'

Tutto il giorno	All day, the whole day
Tutto un giorno	All one day, a whole day

2. Reinforced by **quanto** it means 'all possible,' 'all there were,' 'all of them,' 'every one of them.'

Tutti quanti fuggirono **Every one of them** fled

3. Before a relative, **tutto** takes **quello** or **ciò**.

Tutto quello che disse fu vero **All that** he said was true

d. Poco, molto, troppo, tanto, and quanto are often used as referring to time.

X Stette molto a tornare	He was a <u>long</u> time getting back
/// Ci vorrà troppo	It will take <u>too long</u>
/// Quanto ci sarà da aspettare?	How long will there be to wait?
/// Dopo non molto	After a <u>short time</u>
/// Ogni quanto c'è il tram?	How often does the tram run?
/// Ogni tanto	Every so often, every little while
/// Poco fa	A little while ago
/// Fra poco	In a little while

161. The Verb *parere* 'seem.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: **parere, parendo, paio, parrò, parvi or parsi, parso or paruto**

PRESENT INDICATIVE

paio	paiamo
pari	parête
pare	pàiono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

paia	paiamo
paia	paiate
paia	pàiano

VOCABULARY

Borbone *m.* Bourbon

il ducato duchy

le Due Sicilie the Two Sicilies,
Naples and Sicily

Enrico Henry

Filippo Philip

Giorgio George

il granducato grand duchy

l'impero *m.* empire

il Lombardo-Veneto Lombardy and
Venetia

il mestiere trade

la paglia straw; **muovere** ~ stir

la pera pear

il Piemonte Piedmont

il regnante ruler

il regno kingdom

la Savoia Savoy

il tornaconto advantage
la Toscana Tuscany

dividere, divisi, diviso divide
elēggere, elēssi, eletto elect
intēdere, intēsi, inteso understand
muōvere, muōssi, mosso move
rēggere, rēssi, retto rule

davvero truly, indeed
diētro behind
faccio 1 sg. pres. ind. of fare (irr.)
do, make
faceva 3 sg. past descr. ind. of fare
nulla anything; with non, nothing
o well, now
sotto under
veramente really

EXERCISE

I

PIPPO DICE LA STORIA

Un signore che visita la scuola domanda a un contadinello :

— Come ti chiami ?

— Pippo del Falorni, ai suoi comandi.

— E tuo padre come si chiama ?

— Gasparo del Falorni, ai suoi comandi.

— Che mestiere fa ?

— Il contadino.

— Ti piace il mestiere del contadino ?

— Sissignore.

— Perchè ?

— Perchè si sta sempre all' aria aperta, si lavora di molto e siamo pieni di salute.

— Bravo Pippo ! . . . E . . . dimmi un po' : di storia patria ne sai nulla ?

— Sissignore. La so tutta veramente bene.

— O sentiamo. In quale anno incominciarono le guerre per l' indipendenza d' Italia ?

— Nel 1848.

— Va bene ! O dimmi un po', Pippo, in quanti stati si divideva a quel tempo l' Italia ?

— L' Italia era divisa, a quel tempo, in sette stati: il Piemonte sotto la dinastia di Savoia; il Lombardo-Veneto soggetto all' impero d' Austria; il ducato di Parma, quello di Modena e il granducato di Toscana, governati da principi i quali non movevano paglia senza il permesso dell' Austria; il Regno delle due Sicilie retto dai Borboni, che erano i peggiori di tutto; e lo stato Pontificio.

— Bravo bambino! E . . . dimmi un po'; nel governo di questi piccoli stati era rappresentato il popolo?

— Non capisco.

— C' erano le Camere dei deputati eletti dal popolo, i senatori, i ministri?

— Nossignore. Ogni regnante faceva tutto da sè. Ben inteso che dietro c' era sempre l' Austria che ordinava, proibiva o approvava, secondo il suo tornaconto.

— Avevi ragione. Bravo Pippo! La sai veramente bene davvero, e ne faccio i miei sinceri elogi a te e al tuo maestro.

Dimmi un po'

II
quante guerre furono fatte per

i. Just tell me, Pippo, how many wars were fought for Italian independence? Three, sir. 2. When began the first? About seventy years ago. 3. And the second? In 1859. 4. And the third? In 1866. 5. Few states of Italy were well governed before the War of Independence. 6. Foreign rulers divided Italy among themselves. 7. Dante was born in the thirteenth century and died in the fourteenth. 8. Louis XIV, Charles IX, Philip II, Henry VIII, and George III were all of them famous rulers. 9. How often does the train for Florence run? 10. It is half past three; it will arrive in a little while. 11. These pears seem good; I will give you half of mine. 12. $24 - 8 = 16$. $27 \times 14 = 378$. 13. I shall not accompany them to the train. It would take too long.

LESSON XXV

THE INDEFINITE ARTICLE. THE VERB *FARE*

162. The Indefinite Article. The indefinite article is omitted in Italian —

a. Before a predicate noun, unmodified, expressing nationality, or condition in life.

Morì mārtire

He died **a martyr**

È Italiano

He is **an Italian**

È professore?

Is he **a professor**?

Napoleone s'è fatto imperatore

Napoleon became (*or* made himself) **emperor**

Quella signora è contessa

That lady is **a countess**

Vittorio Emanuele II fu un re valeroso

Victor Emanuel II was **a valorous king**

1. In answer to the question 'Who is he?' as distinguished from 'What is he?' the indefinite article is retained.

Who is he? He is a lawyer

È un avvocato

What is he? (What is his occupation?) He is a lawyer

È avvocato

*2. If the predicate noun is used metaphorically, the indefinite article is retained.

È un āngelo

He is an angel

But, speaking literally,

Non erano passati otto giorni e il bambino era āngelo

In less than a week the child was an angel (i.e. dead)

b. Before a noun in apposition, when explanatory and not alluding to a familiar fact. (The appositive often precedes.)

Il Gabelli, uomo di pensiero e di studi

Gabelli, a man of thought and studious habits

Gēnero di Alessandro Manzoni, amico del d' Azeglio, il Giorgini fu uno degli ũltimi testimoni di quel periodo della letteratura italiana	Son-in-law of Alessandro Manzoni, friend of d' Azeglio, Giorgini was one of the last witnesses of that period of Italian literature
--	--

The definite article is used in familiar allusion.

Giuseppe Mazzini, il grande agita- tore	Mazzini the great agitator
--	----------------------------

c. After **da** in the sense of 'like,' 'in the character of,' or when indicating origin.

Morì da soldato	He died like a soldier
Nacque da padre veneziano e da madre greca	He was born of a Venetian father and a Greek mother

d. Before **cento** and **mille** (cf. 150, b).

e. In such phrases as 'that wretch of a,' etc.

Quel monello di Gigi	That rascal of a Gigi
Quella civetta di Mirandolina	That coquette of a Mirandolina

f. After **che**, in exclamations.

Che bambina carina, che carina bambina!	What a pretty child!
--	----------------------

g. In fractions, before the name of the thing measured.

Un terzo di miglio	A third of a mile
Mi dia mezzo chilo	Give me half a kilo

163. The Verb *fare* 'make,' 'do.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: **fare, facendo, faccio, farò, feci, fatto**

PRESENT INDICATIVE		PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE	
faccio, fo	facciamo	faccia	facciamo
fai	fate	faccia	facciate
fa	fanno	faccia	facciano

For the imperative, see 130, e.

a. Fare governs the infinitive directly. In this construction the *active present infinitive* renders the *passive past participle* in such phrases as 'to have a thing done.'

Lo ~~f~~fecero punire

They **had** him **punished** (*lit.* they caused to punish him)

Fecce preparare una câmera

He **had** a room **made ready**

***b. Idioms with fare.**

~~F~~are il bagno

To take a bath

~~F~~are i bailli

To pack one's trunks

Far caldo, freddo, etc.

To be hot weather, cold weather, etc.

~~F~~ar capolino

To peep out

~~F~~are di cappello

To take off one's hat

Far caso di

To make account of

~~F~~ar comodo

To come handy

~~F~~ar complimenti

To stand on ceremony

~~F~~ar fronte a

To face, oppose

Far fumo

To smoke (of a stove)

~~F~~ar furore

To make a hit

~~F~~are le fusa

To purr

~~F~~ar male a

To hurt

~~F~~ar meglio

To find it better to; *to do better to*

~~F~~are del suo meglio

To do one's best (*in. meglio a*

~~F~~are a meno di

To do without

Far un mestiere

To ply a trade

~~F~~are a metà

To go halves

Far una passeggiata

To take a walk

Far piacere a

To do a kindness, give pleasure, to

Far presto

To be quick

~~F~~arsi il ritratto

To have one's picture taken

~~F~~ar sangue

To bleed

~~F~~ar sciôpero

To strike; take a holiday

Far sì che

To bring it about; to manage so that

~~F~~are un sonnellino

To take a nap

~~F~~ar specie a

To surprise

Far strada	To be on the way, progress
Far di suo	To <u>do of one's own accord</u>
Far tardi	To be late
Fare a tempo	To be on time
Far di tutto	To try one's hardest
Fare le veci di	To take the place of
Far vedere	To show
Fare una visita a	To call on
Far vista di	To make pretense of
Sul far del giorno, della notte	At dawn, at dusk
Due giorni fa	Two days ago
Che tempo fa?	What kind of weather is it?
Fa bel tempo	It is fine weather

VOCABULARY

il bagaglio baggage, luggage	far complimenti stand on ceremony
il baule trunk	fare a meno di do without
il biglietto d' andata e ritorno	fare una passeggiata take a walk
round-trip ticket	far piacere a give pleasure to
la carrozza carriage	far strada be on the way
il compleanno birthday	fare una visita a call upon
la donna woman, woman servant	mutar di pensiero change one's
l'onomastico <i>m.</i> saint's day	mind
la roba (<i>collective</i>) things	non veder l'ora di long to, be
il ventaglio fan	hardly able to wait to
comodo convenient, comfortable	pigliare take
carino } pretty	sentire la mancanza di miss (a
grazioso }	person)
cortese } kind	di giorno by day
gentile }	di notte by night
educato polite	poi then
pesante heavy	a portata di mano within reach of
fare i bauli pack one's trunks	one's hand
far comodo come handy	posso <i>1 sg. pres. ind. of potere</i>
	(<i>irr.</i>) be able

EXERCISES

I

1. Abbiamo voluto fare una visita alla Signora C. 2. La donna ci ha fatto passare, ma poi ci ha detto che non era in casa la signora. 3. L'abbiamo incontrata più tardi da nostra zia. 4. È vero che va a Vallombrosa, Signorina? 5. Sì, Signora. Non vedo l'ora di partire. 6. Mi piace tanto il viaggiare. 7. Ma pigli un biglietto d'andata e ritorno, per esser sicura di tornar qui. 8. Sentiremo molto la mancanza di Lei. 9. Ha da fare i bauli? 10. Sì, non posso fare a meno di tre bauli per la mia roba. 11. E poi ci sono i bagagli, i quali sono molto pesanti. 12. Mi permetta di darle questo ventaglio, perchè farà comodo se viaggia di giorno. 13. Grazie tante. Che grazioso ventaglio! Ci vuole molta roba per il viaggio, perchè fa caldo prima, e poi fa freddo. 14. A che ora partirà stasera? Ha ordinato la carrozza? 15. Non bisogna ordinarla oggi. Ho mutato di pensiero. Non parto prima di mercoledì. 16. Chi è il forestiere che ha invitato a pranzo? 17. È un professore. È Francese? No, è Americano. 18. È un uomo molto educato. Viene a farmi una visita sempre pel mio compleanno. 19. Quando è il Suo onomastico? Il ventitre giugno.

II

1. What day is your birthday? The 28th of January. And your saint's day? The 18th of July. 2. Will you take a walk with me, to [per] give me pleasure? 3. Please buy me a round-trip ticket to Florence. 4. When you have bought it, bring it to us. 5. The servant will pack the trunks for them. 6. Let us call upon our friend Mrs. D., and on our way we will buy some things for our mother. 7. They always travel by night, because it is less hot. 8. What a pretty fan! It is prettier than mine. 9. I have put your books on the shelf, within reach of your hand. 10. They will miss us and I shall miss them. 11. I cannot do without my friends.

12. Here is Mrs. C. Sit down, Mrs. C. Do not stand on ceremony. 13. They wish me to pack the trunks, and there are more than four of them. 14. Come at half-past four. Do not change your mind.

DIALOGO

IN UN ALBERGO

Vengono tre signore e una bambina, che domandano del padrone. Egli viene e dice loro :

— Buon giorno, Signore. Che desiderano ?

— Desideriamo delle camere. Ne vogliamo due a un letto, comunicanti, e una a due letti perchè la bambina stia colla mamma.

— Benissimo, Signore. Farò Loro vedere quali camere sono libere. Eccone due a un letto, comunicanti, con terrazza. Sono esposte al sole. Ci si sta bene d'inverno. Ecco quest'altra che dà sul giardino ; è grande, con due letti, e se non è a mezzogiorno non c'è male perchè c'è il termosifone.

— Vabbene. Queste camere ci piacciono. Quanto sarebbe la pensione ?

— Se Loro restano almeno tre giorni, sarà di otto lire il giorno.

— Vabbene. Faremo venire i bauli stasera, e verremo prima del pranzo.

LESSON XXVI

IMPERSONAL VERBS. THE VERB STARE

164. Impersonal Verbs. *a.* Impersonal verbs have no real subject, and are conjugated only in the third person. ^{irregular} What would be the subject in English is often expressed by the dative. They are used to express necessity, convenience, or accident; weather; appearance; satisfaction, dissatisfaction; etc.

Non merita il conto	It is not worth while
Non importa	It does not matter
Non conviene	It is not proper, not suitable
Me ne rincresco	I am sorry about it
Piùve a rovescio	It is raining in torrents
Come le pare?	How does it seem to you? What do you think?

*1. Occasionally **egli (gli)** or **e'** is used redundantly as subject of an impersonal verb (cf. 100, *g*, 2).

^{egli} Gli è che siamo in alto mare	The truth is we are in deep water
--	-----------------------------------

b. Impersonal verbs require the subjunctive if the subject of the dependent clause is not of the same person as the dative pronoun; otherwise they may take the infinitive (cf. 174, *c*).

Bisogna che tutti lavorino	All must work
Bisogna lavorare	It is necessary to work
Mi dispiace che Lei debba partire	I am sorry you must go
Mi dispiace di partire	I am sorry to go

^{se ne} 1. These verbs take **di** before a noun object.

Mi dispiace della sua malattia	I regret his illness
--------------------------------	----------------------

c. Many verbs not essentially impersonal may be used impersonally.

Sta a lui di farlo.	It lies with him to do it
È (di) mestieri }	
Fa d' uopo }	It is necessary <i>Tr. 10 p. 12</i>
Tocca a me, <i>vicine la volta di più: grandissima pila di cose</i>	It is my turn
Pare che abbia molto denaro	He seems to have much money
Va bene	It goes well; very well
Basta	That's enough
Minaccia di nevicare	It threatens to snow
È cessato di piovere	It has stopped raining

d. Many verbs are used only, or mostly, in the third person, but as they have a subject they are not impersonal.

Mi duole la testa	My head aches
Mi dolgono i denti	My teeth ache
Mi piace quel quadro	I like that picture
Mi piacciono le camere	I like the rooms
Mi sembrano ariose	They seem airy
Mi occorre un lapis <i>(scrittore)</i>	I need a pencil
Mi bastano questi	These are enough for me

1. These verbs when followed by a clause are strictly impersonal.

Mi duole che lo dica.	It pains me to have you say it
Mi piace che voglia venire	I am glad you wish to come
Non basta che scriva; deve venire	It is not enough that he write; he must come

2. Non mi piace, 'I do not like,' should not be confused with mi dispiace, 'I am sorry,' 'I regret.' *non mi piace questa libreria: I do not like this book*

Non mi piace questa canzone	I do not like this song
Mi dispiace che Lei abbia ricevuto una brutta notizia	I am sorry you have had bad news

e. For the impersonal use of the reflexive, cf. 106, b.

165. Expressions that Describe Weather.

Piove	It is raining
Nëvica	It is snowing
Tuona	It thunders
Lampeggia, balena	It lightens

IMPERSONAL VERBS

§§ 165-166

Tira vento	The wind blows
Gela, ghiaccia	It is freezing
Sgela, dighiaccia	It is thawing
Fa bel tempo	It is fair weather
Fa cattivo tempo	The weather is bad, disagreeable
Fa caldo, freddo, fresco, umido	It is hot, cold, cool, damp
C'è il fango	It is muddy
C'è la nebbia	It is foggy

166. The Verb *stare* 'be,' 'stay.' (Cf. 136, e.)

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *stare, stando, stò, starò, stetti, stato*

PRESENT INDICATIVE

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

stò	stiamo
stai	state
sta	stanno

stia	stiamo
stia	stiate
stia	stiano

a. Special uses of *stare* :

1. With the present participle, or with *a* and the infinitive, to translate the English 'be' (cf. 102).

Stò leggendo	I am reading
Stanno parlando	They are talking
Eravamo stati a guardarci pochi minuti	We had been looking on a few minutes

2. To mean 'be,' in the sense of to be in a place or a condition.

Non stetti molto a Firenze	I was not long at Florence
Sta bene di salute	He is in good health
Stò di casa in Via Garibaldi	I live on Via Garibaldi

*b. Idioms with *stare*.

Stare allegro	To be cheerful
Stare attento	To be attentive
Star bene, male	To be well, ill
Star bene a, star male a	To befit, not to befit
Stare al buio	To be in the dark
Star di casa	To live, reside

Stare in casa	To stay in
Star cōmodo	To be comfortable
Star fërmo	To be still
Stare frësko	To be sadly off (<i>derisory</i>)
Stare con le mani in mano	To be idle
Star nascōsto	To be hidden
Stare in pensiero	To be worried
Stare per far una cōsa	To be on the point of doing a thing
Stare in piedi	To stand up
Star vicino, lontano	To be near, far
Star zitto	To be silent
Cōme sta? Stō bene	How do you do? I am well

VOCABULARY

la disgrazia	misfortune	accadere, accadde, accaduto	happen
il fango	mud	avvenire (<i>like venire</i>)	happen
il ghiaccio	ice	balenare	lighten
la nebbia	fog	bastare	suffice, be enough
il sole	sun	cessare (di)	cease (to)
		dispiacere a (<i>irr.</i>)	make sorry, cause to regret; mi dispiace I am sorry
brutto	disagreeable, ugly	diventare	become (<i>divento</i>)
ricco (-chi, -che)	rich	ghiacciare	freeze
al giorno d' oggi	nowadays	minacciare	threaten
non . . . che	only, not but, nothing but	nevicare	snow
non c' è male	pretty well	occorrere, occorre, occorso	be necessary
non c' è rimedio	there is no help for it	piovere, piove, piovuto	rain
non mi par vero di	I can't believe,	rincrëscere, rincrëbbe, rincrësciuto	
I can't wait to		(a) (<i>impers.</i>)	make sorry; mi rincrësce I am sorry (<i>w. dat.</i>)
star di casa	live, reside	tirar vento	blow
stare in casa	stay in the house	tonare (cf. 110, d)	thunder
star cōmodo	be comfortable		
stare in pensiero	worry, be worried		
star per (<i>w. inf.</i>)	be about to		

EXERCISE

I

1. Buon giorno, Signore. Come sta? Non c'è male, grazie.
2. E la Signora Bondi, come sta? Non sta tanto bene.
3. Non va fuori perchè minaccia di nevicare.
4. Starà in casa tutto il giorno.
5. Mi dispiace che non stia bene di salute.
6. Quando sarà cessato di nevicare, farà una passeggiata.
7. Le dica che andrò a prenderla.
8. Dove sta di casa? In Via Cavour.
9. Le rincresce della brutta notizia.
10. Per imparare una lingua, non basta che lo scolare la studi e la legga.
11. Occorre anche la pratica.
12. Rincrebbe loro che non venissimo.
13. Avviene spesso al giorno d'oggi che il povero diventi ricco.
14. Che tempo fa? Fa cattivo tempo.
15. Il vento tira forte, ghiaccia, dighiaccia, piove, nevic, tutto a un tempo. Che brutto tempo!
16. Non c'è quest'inverno che il fango, la nebbia e la neve.
17. Allora non andrò fuori. Si sta più comodo in casa.
18. Non mi piace che tiri vento. C'è sole?

II

1. What day of the month is it?
2. It is the 9th.
3. What kind of weather is it?
4. It is very hot.
5. It is lightening, and threatens to thunder.
6. Has it stoppèd raining?
7. Yes, and the wind does not blow, but there is no sun.
8. I shall stay in the house to-day, but I wish you to go out.
9. Do you think it is raining?
10. It seems to me they do not wish to give it to me.
11. A misfortune has occurred, and we are very sorry.
12. I am about to go to France.
13. They need two trunks.
14. How do you do? I am well, but my mother is ill.
15. I am sorry, but do not be worried.
16. Your mother will be better to-morrow.
17. I hope so [it].
18. It seems to me I have nothing but misfortunes.
19. She lives in Florence.
20. I live on Via del Casato.
21. One is very comfortable in Via Cavour.

LESSON XXVII

**CONJUNCTIVES WITH A DEPENDENT INFINITIVE.
THE VERB *POTERE***

167. Conjunctive Objects with a Dependent Infinitive.

a. Generally speaking, if a dependent infinitive has a pronoun object (or objects), the latter may either be appended to it (cf. 95, *b*), or precede the main verb.

Manda a prēnderlo	} He sends for him
Lo manda a prēndere	
Vorrebbe dirmelo?	} Should you be willing to tell it to me?
Me lo vorrebbe dire?	

b. But when the governing verb is impersonal, the object must go with the infinitive.

Non conviēne farlo	It is not convenient to do so
Bişogna dārgliela	It is necessary to give it to her

c. Whereas, if the governing verb be *fare*, *lasciare*, *sentire*, *uđire*, or *vedere*, the object must precede the main verb. The dependent verb, if transitive, becomes passive in meaning.

Lo fēcero fucilare	They had him shot
Ti sēnto cantare	I hear you singing
Lo lasciarono bāttere	They allowed him to be beaten

1. If the object of either verb be a noun, it usually follows both verbs.

Carlētto amava di sentire sonare la banda	Charlie liked to hear the band play
Il generale fece punire il soldato	The general had the soldier punished

OBJECT OF DEPENDENT INFINITIVE §§ 167-168

2. If the main verb also has an object, that object becomes indirect.

Glielo vidi fare	I saw him do it
Per non fare prendere un raffreddore ai bovi	In order not to let the cattle take cold
Fecero accettare la c�rica al generale	They made the general accept the office
La fanno accettare al generale	They make the general accept it

168. The Verb *potere* 'be able.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *potere, potendo, posso, potr , potei, potuto*

PRESENT INDICATIVE

posso	possiamo
puoi	potete
pu�	possono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

p�ssa	possiamo
p�ssa	possiate
p�ssa	p�ssano

a. Cf. 132, a, 1.

VOCABULARY

la banda band	piccino little, tiny
il caff� caf�	
il cameriere waiter	ascoltare listen, listen to (ascolto)
la finestra window	condurre, conducendo, conduco, condurr�, condussi, condotto take, conduct
il gelato ice, ice cream	figurarsi imagine
la gioia joy	ordinare order (ordino)
la giratina little walk	riunire unite, assemble
lo spasso walk, excursion	sonare (110, d) play (an instrument)
lo statuto constitution	sorbire sip
a un tratto suddenly	spicciarsi hasten, hurry
fuori (di) outside (of)	spiegare explain
fuori di porta outside the walls	stancarsi become tired
mentre while	

EXERCISE

I

PERCHÈ OGGI SUONA LA BANDA?

Quella prima domenica del mese di giugno, Carletto, tutto vestito a festa, fu condotto a spasso dal suo babbo.

Prima essi fecero una giratina fuori di porta, poi ritornarono in paese, dove, nella piazza principale, sonava la banda.

Carletto si stancò a stare in piedi. Allora il suo babbo lo condusse al caffè, lì nella piazza, e gli fece prendere un gelato. Il gelato piaceva tanto a Carletto: figuratevi la sua gioia di poterlo sorbire seduto, mentre ascoltava la banda.

A un tratto egli domandò:

— Babbo, perchè suona oggi la banda, e perchè in molte case ci sono le bandiere alle finestre?

— Perchè oggi è la festa dello Statuto — gli rispose il babbo.

— E che cosa è lo Statuto?

— Ah! tu sei così piccino, non saprei come spiegarlo: ti basti sapere che lo Statuto è la più solenne nostra festa civile, la quale insegna a tutti noi Italiani, adulti e piccini, che siamo liberi e riuniti in una sola grande famiglia.

Allora Carletto, battendo le mani, esclamò: *Viva l'Italia!*

II

1. What day is Constitution Day in Italy? It is the first Sunday of June.
2. Why are there tricolored flags at the windows?
3. Can his father explain it to him? 4. He will explain it to him when he is ten years old.
5. Charlie's father took him to walk.
6. Charlie will become tired standing.
7. His father will take him to the café.
8. Will he give him [have him take] an ice?
9. He cannot have him take it because there is no room.
10. Now they have found a table and they can order it.
11. The waiter will bring it to them.
12. Charlie can hardly wait to sip it.
13. But his father

162
 non glielo fece fare
 non glielo fece fare

Lascia che te lo porti

Lasciaglielo portare

OBJECT OF DEPENDENT INFINITIVE § 168

says: "Wait a moment. Let him bring it to you." 14. The waiter would not make them wait if he could hurry. 15. They like the ice very much. 16. They can sip it while they listen to the band. 17. Charlie's father thinks it is beginning to rain. 18. If it rained, they would leave the café. 19. Charlie does not wish it to rain. 20. He wishes to stay there where he can hear the band play. 21. We should like to hear them sing. 22. If it should thunder and lighten they would not be able to stay there. 23. There is the sun! It must have stopped raining.

DIALOGO

DALLA SARTA

È noioso d' andare dalla sarta, ma le signore ne hanno troppo bisogno.

— Dove sta la sua sarta? Ho sentito ch' è molto brava.

— Sta all' ultimo piano di una casa in Via Tornabuoni. L' avverti che ci sono molte scale. Vuole che l' accompagni?

— Mi farebbe un vero piacere. Così mi aiuterà a scēgliere il figurinō e la stoffa. . . . Vorrei un abito da passeggio.

— Come dev' essere, scuro o chiaro?

— Siccome sto per fare un lungo viaggio, me ne occorrerebbero due, uno d' inverno e uno di mezza stagione. Ho bisogno anche di un vestito da casa e un vestito scollato da sera.

— Cominciamo col vestito da casa. Lo farei di una stoffa mezza seta, con guarnizione d' un tōno più scuro.

— Gli abiti da passeggio li vorrei colla sottana a pieghe, molto sēmplice, all' inglese, e piuttosto corta, perch' è piu pratica. Mi ci metta nella giacchetta una fōdera bianca.

— Mi raccomādo che la fodera sia forte, perchè quella dell' ultimo vestito che mi fece a me, mi si sciupò subito.

— Quanto al colore, ci penserò e glielo dirò quest' altra volta quando tornerò per la prova del vestito da casa.

LESSON XXVIII

THE SUBJUNCTIVE. THE VERB *DOLERE*

169. The Subjunctive in Dependent Clauses. The subjunctive, generally speaking, is used to express uncertainty, or at most something less than certainty. It is required in dependent clauses,

a. After verbs of causation or prevention, desire or emotion, concession, doubt, opinion, or ignorance.

Il generale ha dato ordine che non smontino il campo	The general has given orders not to break camp
Impediranno che il nemico s'avvicini	They will prevent the enemy from approaching
Pregava che fossero generosi	He begged them to be generous
Si messe in testa che l'avessero fatto a posta	He took it into his head that they had done it on purpose
Credei d'indovinare che cercasse di morire	I fancied I had guessed that he sought to die
Di dove esca, dove vada, non lo so	Where he comes from, whither he is going, I do not know
Mi fa piacere che vivano lieti	I am glad they are living happily
Mettiamo che sia vero	Let us assume that it is true

1. Pleonastic *non* is commonly used in subordinate clauses after *temere*, *badare*, *manca* poco, *non dubitare*, *non c'è dubbio*, and similar expressions.

Temo che il viaggio non sia troppo lungo	I am afraid the journey will be too long
Poco mancò che non cadesse	He came near falling (It lacked little that he should fall)
Non dubito che non sia vero	I do not doubt that it is true

b. After a verb used negatively or interrogatively.

Non è vero che i ricchi siano sempre felici	It is not true that the rich are always happy
Di rado avviene che un forestiere parli italiano speditamente	It rarely happens that a foreigner speaks Italian fluently
Chi direbbe che fossero Inglesi?	Who would say they were English?

c. After conjunctions of time (before which), concession, and purpose (not yet accomplished), and those meaning 'as if,' 'provided,' 'whenever,' 'wherever,' 'without.' (Cf. 230, a.)

Glielo dirò prima che vengano	I shall tell you before they come
Purchè guarisca , non importa dell' altro	Provided he recovers, nothing else matters
Benchè lo dica lui stesso, non lo credo	Though he says so himself, I don't believe it
Tentò di comprare un vagabondo, perchè facesse una testimonianza falsa	He tried to pay a vagabond to give false testimony
Stava in pensiero, come se temesse qualche disgrazia	He was in anxiety, as if he feared some misfortune
Dovunque sia , lo troveremo	Wherever it is, we shall find it
Passarono diversi minuti senza che desse un segno di vita	Several minutes passed, without his giving a sign of life

d. In conditions whose conclusion is in past future (cf. 93, a).

Se rimanesse , farebbe piacere a sua madre	If he should remain, he would please his mother
--	--

e. After impersonal verbs or expressions.,

Si può dire che l' uomo abbia due nature	It may be said that man has two natures
Occorrerebbe che andasse via subito	It would be necessary for him to go away at once

*1. When the subordinate verb in the subjunctive has a subject, the order is often such as to make that subject appear to belong with the impersonal main verb.

Tutto il **paesaggio** **pareva** che **dicesse** la tranquillità All the landscape seemed to express tranquillity
La battaglia era venuta a quel punto in cui la **direzione** **bisogna** che **sia** supplita dal senno The battle had reached the point where it is necessary that authority be replaced by judgment

f. After superlatives, and 'only' in relative clauses.

Lavora il **più** che **sia** possibile He works the most he can
La **più** **bella** città ch'io **abbia** mai vista The most beautiful city I have ever seen

*1. Sometimes, for vivacity or emphasis, after comparatives.

Il brigandaggio è molto **mēno** **frequēte** che non lo **fosse** Brigandage is much less frequent than it was

g. In an attributive clause which predicates of the antecedent something doubtful, limited, or not yet accomplished.

Un Americano che **vada** in Italia e **studi** il movimento politico An American who should go to Italy and study the political situation (would find, etc.)
Cerca degli orecchini che **accom-**
pagnino la collana She is looking for earrings to match the necklace
Non c'è uno su dieci che la **pensi** come lui There is not one in ten who is of his opinion

h. After indefinites.

Chi ci **avesse** visti dal basso, ci avrebbe presi per due pazzi Any one who had seen us from below would have taken us for two madmen
Per quanto **patisse**, non si lagnò No matter how much he suffered, he did not complain
Chiunque **venga**, non sarà ricevuto Whoever may come, he will not be received

i. In indirect questions.

Tutti sanno **quale** famoso cacciatore egli **fosse** Everybody knows what a famous hunter he was
Pagherei sapere **quello** che **faccia** I wonder what he does

Sentì **quanta fosse** la grandezza di quell' uomo He realized how great was the nobility of that man

NOTE 1. For the subjunctive may usually be substituted the future, when it relates to future time. It is always future, when the matter is certain.

NOTE 2. **Che** is not infrequently omitted.

Una sera sembrò dicesse avessi dato retta ai suoi consigli! One evening it seemed **that** he said **that** if only I had given heed to his advice—!

170. Sequence of Tenses. *a.* A principal verb in the present, imperative, future, or present perfect is followed by the present or present perfect subjunctive.

Non **vuole** ch' io **rimanga**? Do you not wish me to remain?

Dille che **venga** Tell her to come

Non **crederà** che **sia venuto** He will not believe I have come

Non **ho richiesto** che **vada** I have not demanded that he go

b. A principal verb in any other past tense will be followed by the past or past perfect subjunctive.

Si **diceva** che **avesse** dei parenti poveri It was said that he had some poor relatives

Bisognerebbe che **partissi** I should have to leave

Non **dicemmo** che **fosse morto** We did not say he had died

1. The past tenses of the subjunctive may, of course, follow a present tense of the main verb, where the sense requires it.

Crediamo che **fossero partiti** prima che noi ne avessimo notizia We believe they had gone before we had news of it

171. Subjunctive in Independent Clauses. The subjunctive is used in the independent clause,

a. To supply the missing third person of the imperative (cf. 92, *a*).

Sia detto ad onor del vero Be it said out of respect for the truth

b. In the past tense to express an augury or imprecation, usually unlikely of fulfillment.

Ho due canarini. Tu **vedessi** come I have two canaries. If you could
son graziosi! only see how pretty they are!

172. The Verb *dolere* 'grieve,' 'pain.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *Dolere*, *dolendo*, *dolgo*, *dorrò*, *dolsi*, *doluto*

PRESENT INDICATIVE

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

<i>dolgo</i> (<i>doglio</i>)	<i>dogliamo</i> (<i>dolghiamo</i>)	<i>dolga</i> (<i>doglia</i>)	<i>dogliamo</i> (<i>dolghiamo</i>)
<i>duqli</i>	<i>dolete</i>	<i>dolga</i>	<i>dogliate</i>
<i>duple</i>	<i>dolgono</i> (<i>dögliono</i>)	<i>dolga</i>	<i>dölgano</i> (<i>dögliano</i>)

VOCABULARY

la difesa defense

il dovere duty

la faccia face

la salvezza safety

lo scopo purpose

lo spirito spirit

militare military

mite mild, gentle

selvaggio savage, wild

umano human

vile cowardly

contro against

finchè as long as

finchè . . . non (*w. subj.*) until

qualora whenever

qualunque (*adj.*) whatever

sebbene although

accrescere increase

alterare alter

comandare command

deprimere, depresso, depresso de-
press, lower

dimostrare show, demonstrate

esitare hesitate

esporre, esponendo, espongo (cf.
196), *esposi, esposto* expose

impedire prevent

importare (*impers.*) be important

lanciare hurl

punire punish

richiedere, richiesi, richiesto de-
mand

sembrare seem (*sembro*)

sparire disappear

EXERCISE

I (From *La terza Italia*)

1. Lo scopo supremo delle istituzioni militari è la difesa del paese. 2. A questo scopo importa soprattutto che non sia depresso lo spirito militare. 3. Giuseppe Garibaldi ha sempre comandato forze troppo piccole perchè ci possa fornire insigni esempi di organizzazione; ma ha vinto. 4. Noi Americani possiamo dire sinceramente che non siamo militaristi; ma ci sembrerebbe un vile l'uomo che parlasse contro il dovere di esporre la vita, qualora sia necessario, per la patria. 5. Il nostro Lincoln era l'uomo più mite, più antimilitarista che sia stato al mondo. 6. Ma dimostrò che egli non avrebbe esitato un momento a lanciare il suo paese in una guerra tremenda, se la salvezza del paese stesso l'avesse richiesto. 7. Le guerre sono una cosa terribile, uno spettacolo selvaggio; speriamo che col tempo finiscano per sparire dalla faccia della terra. 8. Finchè il mondo rimane quello che è, bisognerebbe alterare profondamente la natura umana per impedire che la coscienza della superiorità nazionale non accresca le energie individue, in qualunque direzione esse vengano applicate.

II

1. Let us hope that wars may disappear from the face of the earth. 2. As long as the world remains what it is, it is important that men should know how to fight for their country. 3. In whatever direction they are going, they wish the soldiers to follow them. 4. Do you think that the supreme purpose of military institutions is the defense of the country? 5. The general gave orders that his soldiers should not expose their lives that day. 6. We wish to prevent the military spirit from increasing. 7. It grieves us that you should speak of it. 8. It seems to us that the defense of the country is important above all. 9. Although he was a mild man, the safety of the country demanded that he should

fight. 10. They would talk against a soldier who should hesitate to expose his life. 11. We are afraid that he will seem a coward, although he has done his duty. 12. The general had him punished, although he had shown the military spirit. 13. He exposed his life whenever the safety of the country demanded it. 14. We must alter the world before wars can disappear. 15. He seems the greatest general that has ever commanded our soldiers. 16. If we could reduce the military spirit, we should prevent wars from increasing. 17. The general ordered us to follow him in order not to expose his soldiers.

LESSON XXIX

THE INFINITIVE. THE VERB DIRE

173. The Infinitive. The infinitive may be used —

a. As a substantive, in all cases ; it often best translates the English gerund in *-ing* (cf. 193, d).

Mi duole il dirlo	It pains me to say it
Non è assurdo lo sperare che si possa rinunziare alla guerra	It is not absurd to hope that war may be given up
La produzione dell' Inghilterra è lungi dal bastare ai suoi bisogni	The production of England is far from sufficing for its needs
Le arti giovano al paese nel suo andare verso la civiltà	The arts are helpful to a country in its movement toward civilization
Stimava il ridere essere medicina sicura	He thought that laughing was a sure remedy
Al primo entrare	On first entering
Fu imprigionato per aver congiurato	He was imprisoned because of having conspired

b. As a verb, governing objects, etc., being substituted very often, especially where the subject is identical, for a dependent clause (usually in the subjunctive) of time, cause,

command, purpose, result, condition or concession, or indirect discourse or question.

Le donne, a vederci passare , piangevano	The women, as they saw us pass , were weeping
Mi telefoni prima di venire	Telephone me before you come
Ditegli di scrivermi	Tell him to write me
Ha promesso di mutar vita	He has promised to change his way of life
Chi è posto tanto in alto da non temere di cadere?	Who is so high that he need fear no fall?
L'ha detto in modo da farsi credere	He said it in such a way as to make them believe him
A sentirlo parlare , si direbbe che fosse Francese	If you heard him speak , you would say he was a Frenchman
Lo lasciarono partire, a patto di tornare l'indomani	They let him go, provided he should return next day
Credo di doverlo fare	I think I have to do it
Cercava qualche luogo ove fare il suo deposito	He was looking for some place where he might make his deposit

1. Or it may be at once substantive and verb, governing an object while itself an object.

Si propose di far un viaggio	He intended to make a journey
-------------------------------------	--------------------------------------

c. Elliptically, with the force of a finite verb.

E poi da capo a parlare inglese	Then they began all over again to talk English
Ecco venire frettoloso un volontario	Here came up hastily a volunteer
Qui, il Griso a proporre , don Rodrigo a discutere finchè ebbero concertata la maniera di condurre a fine l'impresa	Hereupon Griso began to propose and Don Rodrigo to discuss , until they had arranged a method for bringing the enterprise to a conclusion
Che fare?	What is to be done?
Piuttosto morire che fare una tal cosa	I would rather die than do such a thing

174. Government of the Infinitive. The infinitive may depend upon —

a. A noun, by means of *da* or *di*.

<i>M</i> acchina <i>da</i> scrivere	Typewriter
Ha intenzione <i>di</i> farlo	He intends to do it

b. An adjective.

1. By means of *a*.

<i>Il</i> coltello è adatto <i>a</i> tagliare	The knife is useful for cutting
Siamo pronti <i>a</i> partire, <i>or</i> : <i>per</i> <i>partire</i>	We are ready to leave
Fu il primo <i>a</i> entrare	He was the first to enter
Cose leggiadre <i>a</i> riguardare	Things lovely to look at

2. By means of *da*.

<i>Il</i> suolo è ripido <i>da</i> doverci posare	The ground is so steep that we
<i>i</i> piedi ben pari	must plant our feet very evenly

3. By means of *di*.

Siamo felici <i>di</i> vederlo	We are happy to see him
--------------------------------	-------------------------

c. A verb.

1. Directly, upon the following:

<i>ardire</i> dare (may be used <i>di</i> <i>di</i>)	<i>occorrere</i> be necessary
<i>bastare</i> suffice	<i>osare</i> dare
<i>bisognare</i> be necessary	<i>parere</i> appear
<i>convenire</i> be suitable	<i>potere</i> be able
<i>dovere</i> owe, must, ought	<i>sapere</i> know how
<i>essere d'uopo, essere (di) mestieri,</i>	<i>sentire</i> hear, feel
be necessary	<i>udire</i> hear
<i>fare</i> make, cause, have done	<i>vedere</i> see
<i>lasciare</i> allow, let	<i>volere</i> wish, will

2. By means of *a*. Verbs of motion or rest, and many verbs signifying the ~~source~~, beginning, continuance, or promotion of an action, take *a* before the infinitive.

<i>Andò a chiamarla</i>	He went to call her
<i>Si misero a discorrere in italiano</i>	They began to talk in Italian

Stette a sentire con aria di curiosità He stood listening with an air of curiosity

Seguitavo a leggere ad alta voce I went on reading aloud

3. By means of *di*. Most other verbs govern the infinitive by means of *di*.

Mi par di averlo veduto It seems to me I have seen him

Promette di venire He promises to come

M' ha scritto di mandarglielo He has written me to send it to him

Dimostra di avere gran ricchezza He appears to have great wealth

4. In special senses, by means of *per* and *da*. The infinitive with *per* expresses purpose; with *da* it expresses obligation, or propriety, and usually may be translated by the passive.

O anima che vai per esser lieta O spirit who goest to (in order to) be joyful

Che resta da fare? What remains to be done?

Ci sarà molto da aspettare? Will there be long to wait?

Le costruzioni franche sono da evitarsi French constructions should be avoided

175. The Verb *dire* 'say,' 'tell.' (Cf. 130, e.)

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *Dire*, dicendo, dico, dirò, dissi, detto

PRESENT INDICATIVE

dico	diciamo
dici	dite
dice	dicono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

dica	diciamo
dica	diciate
dica	dicano

VOCABULARY

il bilancio balance, account
la civiltà civilization
la coscienza consciousness
l' esercito *m.* army
il danno damage
l' evenienza *f.* occurrence
l' onda *f.* wave

l' ordinamento *m.* arrangement
la povertà poverty
il sostegno support
la spesa expense
assurdo absurd
civile civilized, civil
fiacco weak

appartenere belong	trattarsi di be a question of
diffondere, diffuso, diffuso scatter	eroicamente heroically
figurare figure	forse perhaps
rinunziare a give up (<i>sometimes di before an inf.</i>)	in quanto a as for
	verso towards

EXERCISE

I (From *La terza Italia*)

1. Non è da dimenticare che in Italia lo spirito militare è molto fiacco. 2. Naturalmente, in quanto a spese militari, la miglior cosa sarebbe che se ne potesse fare a meno. 3. Forse potrà venire un giorno in cui queste spese non figureranno più nei bilanci delle nazioni civili. 4. Ma è assurdo il credere che una nazione possa rinunziare a tenersi pronta per ogni evenienza. 5. La relativa povertà dell'Italia moderna dipende soprattutto, come credo d'aver dimostrato, dai suoi cattivi ordinamenti amministrativi, ordinamenti che non servono di sostegno al paese nel suo andare verso la civiltà. 6. Questa onda di sentimento, che si cerca di diffondere nel popolo italiano, contraria a tutto ciò che sa di vita militare, finirà per esser di grave danno al paese. 7. Non si tratta di fare del militarismo, ma di far sì che ogni buon figlio d'Italia abbia la coscienza d'appartenere a un grande popolo, e sia determinato a fare eroicamente il suo dovere. 8. Non sarebbe difficile far combattere i soldati quando l'esercito fosse condotto da buoni generali.

II

1. We think we have shown that it is not a question of the military spirit. 2. We must not give up holding ourselves in readiness to defend our country. 3. It is to be hoped that war will vanish from the face of the earth. 4. We wished to go to France, although the expenses of the journey would be great. 5. It is absurd to think that the army is not led by good generals. 6. We are happy to know that they are talking against everything that smacks of war.

NUMBER

§§ 176-177

Imponete che siamo pronti a partire
 7. It is important that we should be ready to leave. 8. They ended by giving up following the army. 9. They would have told me to write them about it if they had wished to know. 10. He hesitates to leave, and we are trying to prevent him from leaving. 11. Would it be difficult to make the army leave before the general returns? 12. It pains us to see that he cannot write. 13. It pleases us to belong to a great people. 14. They have several letters to write. 15. They are glad to write them. 16. We cannot hear them sing.

LESSON XXX

NUMBER IN NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES. THE VERB PIACERE

176. Invariables. All monosyllables, and all nouns ending in a consonant, an accented vowel, u, i, or ie (except moglie), remain unchanged in the plural.

il re the king; i re
 il lapis the pencil; i lapis
 la libertà liberty; le libertà
 il chiù the cue-owl; i chiù
 la crisi the crisis; le crisi
 la serie the series; le serie

177. Feminine Plurals. *a.* Feminine nouns, and feminine forms of adjectives, ending in unaccented *a*, change *a* to *e* in the plural.

la spazzola the brush; le spazzole

1. Those in *-ca* and *-ga* form the plural respectively in *-che* and *-ghe*, inserting the *h* to preserve the hard sound of *c* and *g*.

la barca the boat; le barche
 la bottega the shop; le botteghe
 la mano bianca the white hand; le mani bianche

2. Nouns (but not adjectives) in unaccented **-cia** and **-gia** preceded by a consonant drop **i** before the **e** of the plural.

la provincia the province; **le province**

la spiaggia the beach; **le spiagge**

But

la nostalgia homesickness; **le nostalgie**

la sottana grigia the gray shirt; **le sottane grigie**

3. Feminine nouns in **o** and **e** (not **ie**) form their plural in **i**.

la mano the hand; **le mani**

la lite the lawsuit; **le liti**

178. Masculine Plurals. *a.* Masculine nouns in **a**, **o**, **e** (not **ie**), and masculine forms of adjectives in **o** or **e**, form their plural in **i**.

il papa the pope; **i papi**

il problema the problem; **i problemi**

il socialista the socialist; **i socialisti**

il buono Inglese the good Englishman; **i buoni Inglese**

l'Italiano intelligente the intelligent Italian; **gli Italiani intelligenti**

1. Those in **-ca** and **-ga** form their plural respectively in **-chi** and **-ghi**.

il duca the duke; **i duchi**

il collega the colleague; **i colleghi**

Except **Belga** 'Belgian,' of common gender, which has a masculine plural **Belgi**, and a feminine **Belghe**.

2. Those in unaccented **-io** change **io** to **i** (often written **i**, **j**, or **ii**). Where the **i** is accented, the plural is always **ii**.

lo studio the study; **gli studi**

il foglio the sheet of paper; **i fogli**

But

l'oblio forgetfulness; **gli oblii**

3. When a noun in **-ista** refers to a woman and takes the feminine gender, its plural ends in **e**.

la socialista the woman socialist; **le socialiste**

b. Those in **-go** form their plural in **-ghi**.

l' albergo the hotel; **gli alberghi**

1. But those in unaccented **-fago**, and those in unaccented **-logo** when referring to scientists, form the plural in **-gi**.

antropofago man-eating; **antropofagi**

il filologo the philologist; **i filologi**

But

il dialogo dialogue; **i dialoghi**

2. **Mago** has two plurals, differing according to meaning: **maghi** 'magicians' and **magi** 'Magi.'

c. Those in **-co** form their plural in **-chi** if the penult is accented; otherwise in **-ci**. Adjectives in **-co** likewise.

il medico ricco the rich physician; **i medici ricchi**

il fuoco magico the magic fire; **i fuochi magici**

il cieco stanco the tired blind man; **i ciechi stanchi**

il monaco austriaco the Austrian monk; **i monaci austriaci**

1. The following words, though the penult is accented, form their plurals in **-ci**:

amico friend

greco Greek

nemico, inimico enemy

porco pig

NOTE. **Greco** has a regular plural in the phrase **vinì greci** 'Greek wines.'

2. The following words, although the penult is unaccented, form their plural in **-chi**:

càrico loaded

mànico handle

stràscico train of gown

lìmentico neglectful

pàrroco parish priest

tossico poison

fòndaco warehouse

stòmaco stomach

tràffico traffic

lāstrico pavement

stòrico historic

NOTE. There are further exceptions under **b**, 1, and **c**, 2, but the words are obsolete or rare.

179. Irregular Plurals. a. Certain masculine nouns in *o* have an irregular plural in *a* with change of gender. These are

un centinaio about a hundred; *delle centinaia*
 un migliaio about a thousand; *delle migliaia*
 il miglio mile; *le miglia*
 il paio pair; *le paia*
 l'uovo egg; *le uova*

b. Many others have this feminine plural in *a* in addition to a regular masculine one in *i*. For most of the following words the form in *a* is very common; especially for those referring to parts of the body when taken collectively:

l'anello ring; *gli anelli, le anella*
 il budello bowel; *i budelli, le budella*
 // il calcagno heel; *i calcagni, le calcagna*
 il castello castle; *i castelli, le castella*
 il dito finger; *i diti, le dita*
 il ginocchio knee; *i ginocchi, le ginocchia*
 il grido cry; *i gridi, le grida*
 il labbro lip; *i labbri, le labbra*
 l'osso bone; *gli ossi, le ossa*
 il pugno fist; *i pugni, le pugna*
 lo strido shriek; *gli stridi, le strida*

*1. In the following nouns the plural in *a* has a different or more restricted meaning, usually more literal:

il braccio, i bracci, arm	le braccia arms <i>of the body</i>
il carro, i carri, wagon	il carro, le carra, wagon-load
il cervello, i cervelli, brain	le cervella brains <i>in the physical sense</i>
il ciglio, i cigli, visage	il ciglio, le ciglia, eyebrow
il coltello, i coltelli, knife	le coltella large knives
il corno, i corni, horn	le corna horns <i>of an animal</i>
il cuoio, i cuoi, leather	le cuoia hides, whole skins
il filo, i fili, thread	le fila collective
il fondamento, i fondamenti, foundation	le fondamenta foundations <i>of a building</i>

il frutto, i frutti, fruit	le frutta fruit served on the table
il fuso, i fusi, spindle	le fusa purring <i>far le fusa</i>
il gesto, i gesti, gesture	il gesto, le gesta, exploit
il gomito, i gomiti, elbow	le gomita elbows, <i>part of the body</i>
il legno, i legni, wood	le legna wood to burn <i>la legna</i>
il lenzuolo, i lenzuoli, sheet	le lenzuola pair of sheets
il membro, i membri, member	le membra parts of the body, collectively
il muro, i muri, wall	le mura all the walls of a building or city, collectively
il riso, i risi, rice	il riso, le risa, laughter
il sacco, i sacchi, sack	il sacco, le sacca, sackful
lo staio, gli stai, barrel	lo staio, le staia, barrelful
il suolo, i suoli, ground, pavement	il suolo, le suola, sole of a shoe
l'urlo, gli urli, cry	le urla human cries

*2. The following have the feminine plural in **a** only in poetry:

il fato fate	il pomo apple
il peccato sin	il vestigio trace, footstep

6. Plurals wholly irregular.

l'ala wing; le ali (le ale)	la moglie wife; le mogli
il bue ox; i buoi	l'uomo man; gli uomini
il dio god; gli dei	

*180. Plurals of Proper Names. *Given names* **a.** Given names form their plurals according to the regular rules, except that masculines in **a** and feminines in **o** are invariable.

I Carli	The Charleses
I Geremia	The Jeremiahs
L'Elene	The Helens
Le Clio	The Clios

b. Family names are invariable, unless ending in **o** and not compound.

Il Galileo, i Galilei	Galileo, the Galileos
Il Buondelmonte, i Buondelmonte	Buondelmonte, the Buondelmonte family
Il della Robbia, i della Robbia	Della Robbia, the Della Robbias

181. Plural of Compound Nouns. Compound nouns form their plural in one of four ways:

a. The second member only is variable.

il gentiluomo gentleman; *i gentiluomini*

il lavamanò washstand; *i lavamani*

b. The first member only is variable.

il capopòpolo head of the popular party; *i capipòpolo*

c. Both members are variable.

la buonamano tip, fee; *le buonemani*

il palcoscenico proscenium arch; *i palchiscenici*

d. Both members are invariable.

il lustrascarpe bootblack; *i lustrascarpe*

il portavoce megaphone; *i portavoce*

***182. Defective Nouns.** *a.* The following nouns have no singular:

gli annali annals

le forbici scissors

gli occhiali spectacles

le busse beating

i maccheroni macaroni

le tenebre darkness

le esequie obsequies

le nozze wedding

etc.

b. The following have no plural:

la calvizie baldness

la fame hunger

la sete thirst

la canizie white hairs

la mane morning

etc.

la copia plenty

il pepe pepper

Many names of metals, and many abstract nouns.

c. Many nouns, though not strictly defective, are used almost exclusively in either the singular or the plural. Such are

la progénie, la prole, la stirpe,

i ruderi ruins

race, progeny

gli spinaci spinach

i posteri posterity

d. Some nouns have a different meaning in the plural.

la molla spring, catch

le molle tongs

il rostro beak

i rostri tribune, rostrum

il vèzzo custom

i vèzzi caresses

***183. Collectives.** Collective nouns which are plural in meaning but singular in form take a verb or adjective in the singular.

Sono <i>gente</i> che non <i>viaggia</i> mai	They are people who never travel
Avevo lasciato <i>tutta</i> la <i>mia roba</i> a Parigi	I had left all my things in Paris

***184. Distributive Singular.** The singular is used in Italian, of nouns referring to parts of the body or to clothing, to mean 'one each,' where the plural would be used in English.

Alzarono <i>la mano</i> destra	They raised their right hands
Si levarono <i>il cappello</i>	They took off their hats

But

Fece tagliar loro <i>le mani</i>	He had their hands cut off (both hands of each)
----------------------------------	--

a. Yet the adjective in such cases agrees in the plural.

L'idea d'uscirne <i>sani e salvi</i> non passò per <i>il capo</i> a <i>nessuno</i>	The idea of getting out safe and sound never entered their heads
--	---

185. The Verb *piacere* 'please,' 'be pleasing.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *Piacere, piacendo, piaccio, piacerò, piacqui, piaciuto*

PRESENT INDICATIVE

piaccio	piacciamo
piaci	piacete
piace	piacciono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

piaccia	piacciamo
piaccia	piacciate
piaccia	piacciano

VOCABULARY

l'albergo m. hotel

l'antologia f. anthology

l'arancio m. orange-tree

la barca boat

il Belga Belgian

la bottega shop

il chirurgo surgeon

la città city

il dialogo dialogue

il dito finger

il domestico domestic	l' uovo <i>m.</i> egg
le forbici scissors	la virtù virtue, power
il frutto fruit	
il fungo mushroom	antico ancient
la gente folk, people	austriaco Austrian
il ginocchio knee	bellico pertaining to war, of warfare
Giulio Cesare Julius Caesar. <i>Cesar</i>	bellicoso warlike
la guancia cheek	britannico Britannic
il labbro lip	caduco weak
il lapis pencil	càrico loaded <i>carichi, 177</i>
il lavamano washstand	cieco blind
il legno wood	clássico classic
la letteratura literature	etrusco Etruscan
il luogo place, location	filosofico philosophical
il lustrascarpe bootblack	forzato forced
la macchia brambles, thicket	greco Greek <i>grecci</i>
la marcia march	laico laic, layman
la metropoli metropolis	ricco rich
la moglie wife <i>la moglie</i>	scàrico run down, free, unloaded <i>scarico</i>
la molla spring, mainspring	simpático nice, congenial, agreeable <i>17</i>
le molle, tongs	stanco tired
il muro wall	tipico typical
il nemico enemy <i>nemico</i>	ubriaco drunk
il paio pair	
il parroco parish priest (<i>parrochi</i>)	accendere, accesi, acceso, light,
il soprabito overcoat	kindle
la specie kind, sort	caricare load, wind up
lo stivale boot	lustrare black, polish
il tacco heel	rompere, ruppi, rotto break
la testa head	tagliare cut

EXERCISE

1. They have their boots blacked. 2. The Britannic kings were old. 3. The watches are run down, both of them. 4. They must be wound up. 5. The mainspring is broken. 6. The Greek boot-blacks had little shops in all the great metropolises. 7. Bring me

some wood for the fires. 8. Let us take a walk outside the walls. 9. The Etruscan cities have been dead for centuries. 10. She has burnt her fingers. 11. The philosophical Greeks studied political institutions. 12. Julius Caesar tells us that the ancient Belgians were a warlike people. 13. I have lost two pairs of scissors, and all my pencils. 14. Her lips and cheeks are red. 15. The Austrian surgeons are very rich. 16. There are orange-trees in our garden. 17. Oranges are the fruit of the orange-tree. 18. The soldiers are not drunk but tired. They have made many forced marches. 19. Scissors are adapted to cutting. 20. The fires were kindled by hostile soldiers.

II

1. The ancient Greeks were a very civilized people. 2. The boats are loaded. 3. Monks and laics are all enemies of the army. 4. Please give me the tongs. 5. The doctors finished their studies in two Austrian cities. 6. The old servants are not rich; they are blind. 7. It is difficult to find mushrooms. 8. They will search for them in the woods and other places. 9. My friends have some anthologies of Greek and Italian literature. 10. The rich politicians have taken off their overcoats. 11. In the hotels of French cities one is very comfortable. 12. The classic literatures were very congenial to him. 13. The Etruscan kings had domestic wives. 14. He had their heads cut off. 15. The virtues of the ancient Greeks were many. 16. He brought me several packages of fruit. 17. They are typical Englishmen. 18. By [with] dialogues one learns the spoken language. 19. I like Mrs. B., I think she is very nice. 20. Send me six eggs and three kinds of fruit. 21. My Greek friends will arrive to-morrow. 22. They seem typical parish priests. 23. It is absurd to say the ancient civilizations were not great. 24. The French are an agreeable people. 25. They are people who think the military spirit is an evil. 26. Her Austrian friends (f.) are very nice. 27. Surgeons and doctors become tired because of working too much. 28. Guns are instruments of warfare.

LESSON XXXI

MODAL AUXILIARIES. THE VERB *DOVERE*

186. Modal Auxiliaries. *a.* The modal auxiliaries are *volere* 'wish,' 'will,' *potere* 'be able,' *dovere* 'be obliged,' expressing what *must*, *may*, *should*, *ought to*, or *is to* happen.

b. As these verbs are not defective like their English equivalents, *potere* and *dovere* may as auxiliaries be conjugated in the compound tenses. The dependent infinitive remains in the present tense, whereas in English it must be thrown into the compound past tense.

Avrebbe dovuto *farlo*

He ought to **have done** it

Non avrebbe potuto *venire*

He could not **have come**

Non ha potuto andarvi oggi

He has not **been able** to go there
to-day

1. But cf. 140, c, 2.

c. These verbs follow the regular rules for the agreement of the past participle (cf. 194, b).

Ci sarebbero voluti pochi soldi

It would have taken but a few cents

Tali sono oggi, quali li hai potuti vedere

Such they are to-day as you have
been able to see (them)

d. When governing an infinitive, these verbs may take the auxiliary of the dependent verb.

Non era voluto *partire*

He had not wished to leave

Non hanno potuto *lavorare*

They could not work

Sarebbe dovuto *venire*

He ought to have come

È cominciato a *ammalare*

He began to be taken ill

*1. When the infinitive is passive, the modal auxiliary may be thrown into the passive and the infinitive remain active.

Non potè esser *portato*

Non fu potuto *portare*

} He could not be carried

2. Used absolutely, without infinitive, the auxiliary is **avere**.

Ha voluto ma non ha potuto

He wished to but could not

187. Special Uses of the Modal Auxiliaries.

a. Special uses of **volere**.

1. The past future means 'should like.'

Vorrei visitare la città

I **should like** to see the sights of
the city

2. 'Will you?' unless it means 'Do you wish?' 'Should you like?' is often best translated not by **volere** but by the present tense of the verb.

✓ Mi ~~fa~~ il piacere di indicarmi la
strada?

Will you do me the kindness to
show me the way?

3. Cf. 133, a, 1 and 2.

b. Special uses of **potere**.

1. It translates 'may' or 'might' in independent clauses (the subjunctive translates them in dependent ones).

Si può dire che tutti i Tedeschi
sappiano cantare

It may be said that all Germans
know how to sing

✓ Potrebbe darsi

It might be, it might be the case

✓ Potevano essere le due

It might have been two o'clock

2. **Non poter a meno di** means 'not be able to help.'

Non potei a meno di ridere

I could not help laughing

3. **Poter su** 'have power over,' 'influence.'

~~Sor~~ da natura fortissimo ingegno
e animo fiero. I casi della vita
molto poterono sull' uno e sul-
l' altro

He had by nature a powerful gen-
ius and an intrepid spirit. The
chances of life **had great influ-**
ence upon both (*lit.* had much
power over the one and the other)

4. Cf. 132, a, 1.

1. In the past future it means 'ought'; in the other tenses, 'must,' 'have to,' 'is to,' etc.

He ought to pay it at once

He **must** pay it at once

He was to pass the winter at Nice

2. For the 'must' or 'must have' of probability is substituted the future or future perfect of the dependent verb (cf. 141, a, 1).

3. In the first person singular present indicative it translates 'Shall I?' in the sense of 'Do you wish me to?'

Shall I pack the trunks? (Do you wish me, is it time, to pack the trunks?)

188. The Verb *dovere*.

PRINCIPAL PARTS: dovere, dovendo, dovrò, devo or debbo, dovei, dovuto

PRESENT INDICATIVE

dobbiamo

dovete

dēvono, dēbbono, (dēggiono)

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

dobbiamo

dobbiate

dēvano, dēbbano, (dēggiano)

Imperative wanting.

VOCABULARY

di là on that side

di qua on this side

nemmeno not even

però however

soltanto only

stretto tight, narrow

tra within, between

da worth; \approx **un soldo** one-cent

costare cost	rifare make again, rebuild
dubitare doubt	ripetere repeat
mormorare murmur	rivoltare turn back
osservare observe	sbagliare make a mistake
ricontare count over, recount	voltarsi turn

EXERCISE

I

— Egisto, va' qui dal fornaio a comprare mezzo chilo di pane, di quello da trenta centesimi il chilo. Eccoti una lira, ~~sta~~ attento, fatti dare il resto. E mi raccomando, non ti fermare per la strada, eh? —

Queste parole erano dette a Egisto dalla mamma. Il bambino a cui non pareva vero di fare i servizini a sua madre, andò difilato dal fornaio; prese il pane e il resto della lira, e via verso casa, senza nemmeno voltarsi di qua o di là.

Quando fu a mezza strada ebbe un' idea: quella di ricontare i denari del resto; erano sei monete da dieci centesimi e due da un soldo, dunque il conto non tornava.

— Facciamolo meglio — mormorò tra sè Egisto — se un chilo di pane costa 30 centesimi, mezzo chilo costa 15. Il fornaio doveva darmi 85 centesimi di ~~resto~~, invece me ne ha dati soltanto 70.—

Egisto non stette più a pensare; rivoltò, e tornò di corsa dal fornaio, e gli disse:

— Sa, Lei ha sbagliato, mi ha dato tre soldi meno di resto; guardi.

— Proprio, bambino? — rispose il fornaio — Li avrai persi per la strada.

— No, no, — ripeté il ragazzo con vivacità; — li tenevo stretti stretti in questa mano.

Il fornaio lo guardò; e gli lesse in viso un' aria tale di sincerità, che non dubitò più. Gli ridiede i soldi, ma gli osservò:

— Ho sbagliato, e lo riconosco; però un' altra volta sta' attento, e il conto rifallo subito qui in presenza mia.

II

1. We must always count our money. 2. She could not do without bread. 3. He would not have been able to help losing his way. 4. Egisto's mother told him not to stop on the way. 5. She says to him: "Here are two lire for you. Don't forget to bring me the change." 6. Go to the baker's, hurry, and be careful. 7. He ought to have brought it to her. 8. Shall I light the fire in all the rooms? 9. The boy ought to have brought two lire; it might be that he had lost them on the way. 10. His mother told him to hurry, that he might bring her the bread before lunch. 11. He was not able to start before eleven, he could not have brought it to her in time. 12. He had the change given him. 13. It must be ten o'clock. 14. He had in his pocket three ten-centesimo pieces and four one-cent pieces. 15. I do not doubt that it is to happen. 16. He had to return at once to the baker's. 17. Egisto was not to stop on the way. 18. His mother feared, if he did not hurry, that he might lose his way. 19. They have not been able to rebuild the walls of those cities. 20. It would have taken ten years. 21. They ought to have told us so before beginning the work. 22. Bakers make bread. 23. It was twelve o'clock before he returned. 24. His mother thinks he has lost his way. 25. The baker might have made a mistake. 26. He might have given me two cents too little. 27. No, he has given me three cents too much.

DIALOGO

DAL SARTO

— Vuol venire con me dal sarto? Mi devo provare un abito da passeggio.

— Volentieri. Dev' essere pronto anche il soprabito che ho fatto pulire. Com'è il nuovo abito?

— È fatto di una stoffa di lana leggera, a quadrettini neri e bigi. È un color pratico.

— Eccoci arrivati. Il sarto sta al terzo piano.

— Buon giorno, Signori. Sono venuti per la prova? Tutt' è pronto. Aspettino un momento che venga il giovane. Ecco. Come le piace?

draw — Mi pare che i calzoni siano un pochettino troppo lunghi. E la giubba non mi sta bene sulle spalle; è troppo attillata. Che ne pensa?

— Le maniche mi sembra che siano un po' troppo corte e anche larghe.

— Come crede, Signore. Lasci fare a me. Siamo in tempo a cambiar tutto facilmente. E Lei, Signore, non le occorre niente?

— Per dir la verità, ho proprio bisogno di una nuova *redingote*. Siccome non mi piace la roba bell' e fatta, devo ordinarlo. Può farmelo fra tre giorni? Sto per far un viaggio.

— Altro! Glielo farò trovare in casa giovedì sera. Ma ci vuole la misura. Prendiamola subito.

— Vabbene. Si deve pagare anticipatamente o dopo?

— Ma che Le pare! Un amico del Signor B. Mi pagherà quando Le converrà. Non ha bisogno di nient' altro?

— No, grazie. Andiamo dunque, e al ritorno devo far delle compre, mi occorre tanta roba da vestiario: delle scarpe basse colorate, un cappello sodo, e un altro a cencio, da viaggio. Il cilindro non lo prendo. Poi delle ciarpette di seta, chiare e scure.

— Come le piacciono le cravatte, rigate o scozzesi?

— Nè l' une nè l' altre. Le porto sempre lisce.

— Ecco una bottega che ha per insegna: *Novità da uomini*. Entriamoci.

LESSON XXXII

RELATIVE, DEMONSTRATIVE, AND INTERROGATIVE
PRONOUNS. THE VERB *UDIRE*189. The Relative Pronoun. *a.* For the forms, see 114.*b.* Special uses of *che* :

1. It is often used elliptically, without preposition, in adverbial or descriptive clauses.

Paese *che* vai usanza *che* troviWhatever country you go to, [follow] whatever customs you find.
(In Rome, do as the Romans do)È venuto nel momento *che* stavo mangiandoHe came at the moment *when* I was eatingUna donna *che* tutti non facevano altro *che* dire *che* l'era tanto buonaA woman of *whom* every one did nothing but say how good she was

2. When its antecedent is a phrase, it must take the article.

Avevamo il largo e profondo fosso alle spalle con solo uno stretto ponte per passo, *il che* rendeva difficile la ritirataWe had behind us the wide, deep ditch, with only a narrow bridge for crossing, *which fact* made retreat difficult*c.* *Cui*, which is usually used after prepositions, may be used as a direct object, where *che* (which may be either subject or object) might cause ambiguity.E caddi come l'uom *cui* sonno pigliaAnd I fell like one *whom* sleep overtakes*d.* *Il quale*, which is either adjective or pronoun, is used (because declinable) to avoid ambiguity, and it seems rather to be preferred for general use, especially with a plural antecedent.

RELATIVES, DEMONSTRATIVES §§ 189-190

<p>Quelli non erano tempi <u>nei quali</u> un presidente di Consiglio potesse agevolmente venir mutato</p> <p>Non ci maravigliamo che la scena de' <i>Promessi Sposi</i> sia stata</p> <p>✓ posta dall' autore <u>in quel di</u> Lecco, nei luoghi <u>ove</u> lo riportavano le prime e le più care sue reminiscenze, <u>dai quali</u> egli si era dovuto staccare per sempre con un vivo dolore</p>	<p>Those were not times in which a President of Council could easily be changed</p> <p>We do not wonder that the scene of "The Betrothed" was laid by the author in the territory of Lecco, in the places whither his earliest and dearest recollections bore him, from which he had to sever himself with sharp grief. (The masculine form <u>quali</u> can evidently refer only to luoghi)</p>
--	--

190. The Demonstrative Pronoun. a. Questo, quello, cotesto.

1. For the forms of questo and quello, see 86; cotesto, codesto, is inflected like questo.

2. Questo refers to what is near the speaker; cotesto, codesto, to what is near the person addressed; quello, to what is more or less removed from both.

<p>Che ne pensa di <u>questo</u> cavallo?</p> <p>Come si chiamano <u>quelle</u> sorelle?</p> <p>M'è piaciuto parecchio <u>codesto</u> abito</p>	<p>What do you think of <u>this</u> horse?</p> <p>What is the name of <u>those</u> sisters?</p> <p>I greatly liked your costume, <u>that</u> costume of yours</p>
---	---

3. Quello and questo mean respectively 'the former' and 'the latter'; but questo, 'the latter,' is always mentioned first.

<p>Il cavallo e il bue sono tutt' e due utilissimi all' uomo, ma si affeziona meno a <u>questo</u> che a <u>quello</u></p>	<p>The horse and the ox are both extremely useful to man, but we have more affection for the former than for the latter</p>
--	---

4. To mean 'this one' and 'that one' when speaking of things, questo and quello are usually reinforced by altro.

<p>Questo libro non l' ho letto. Ho letto <u>quell' altro</u></p>	<p>This book I have not read. I have read <u>that one</u></p>
---	---

5. Special uses of **quello** :

a. Quel che = 'what' when it can be resolved into 'that which.'

Non credè **quel che** gli dissi He did not believe **what** I told him

b. Before di or a relative, it means 'the one,' 'that one.'

Hò prestato loro il mio cavallo e **quello di mio fratello** I have lent them my own horse and **my brother's**

Quelli che vede non sono i Colli Euganei **The ones** you see are not the Euganean Hills

c. Elliptically.

In **quel** (territorio) di Milano In the country round about Milan

Tu non sei più **quello** (medesimo, or di prima)

You are no longer the same person

In **quella** (ora) At that moment

b. Questi, quegli, (quel, que'). These forms are invariable masculine singulars, applicable to persons only, and used only as subject. **Questi** = 'this one,' 'this man'; and **queli** = 'that one,' 'that man.' Restricted to literary usage.

Questi, l'orme di cui pestar mi vedi This man in whose footsteps you see me tread

c. Costui, colui. These have the same meaning as **questi** and **queli**, but are completely inflected and are used in all cases.

1. Forms :

SINGULAR	PLURAL	SINGULAR	PLURAL
costui	costoro	colui	coloro
costei		colei	

2. 'He who' is expressed by **colui che**, or preferably by **chi**.

Colui che guadagna ha il diritto di spendere **He who** earns has the right to spend

Il mondo è di **chi** se lo piglia The world belongs to **him who** takes it

Chi dice soldato, dice obbedienza **Who** says soldier, says obedience

DEMONSTRATIVES, INTERROGATIVES §§ 190-191

a.* In this use, **chi is sometimes equivalent to 'if one.'

Chi è entrato nella vita politica, non conviene che cerchi di arricchirsi	If one enters political life, it is not fitting that he seek to enrich himself
---	--

NOTE. These demonstratives referring to persons only all end in the singular in *i*.

d. **Ciò**. **Ciò** is a neuter of rather general meaning, referring not to a person or a thing, but to a whole idea, meaning 'this' or 'that.'

Gli Italiani sognavano libertà, ma ciò dispiaceva agli Austriaci	The Italians dreamed of liberty, but that displeased the Austrians
---	---

e. **Desso, stesso, medesimo**. These words all mean 'same,' 'selfsame,' 'that very,' etc. **Desso** is used only substantively, as a predicate complement, and for the most part of persons. **Stesso** and **medesimo** are either substantives or adjectives, and refer to either persons or things.

Questi è desso, e non favella Il re stesso l'ha fatto La fortuna medesima è il nostro nemico	This is he, and he speaks not The king did it himself Fortune itself is our foe
--	---

191. The Interrogative Pronoun. The interrogatives are—

chi ? who ? whom ?

che ? **che cosa** ? what ? what thing ? (*pron.*); **che** ? what kind of ? (*adj.*)

quale ? (*inflected*) what ? which ? (*adjective or pronoun*)

di chi ? whose ?

quanto ? (*inflected*) how much ? how many ?

come ? what did you say ?

Chi lo sa ?

Who knows ?

Che cosa ha detto ?

What has he said ?

Che libro legge ?

What kind of book are you reading ?

Quale desidera ?

Which (one) do you wish ?

Di chi sono questi fiori ?

Whose are these flowers ?

Quanti ne vuole ?

How many do you wish ?

10/11/2016

em. 1.6.18 2 = 1.6.18

a. 'What a,' 'what,' in exclamations, is expressed by **che** without article (cf. 162, f).

Che panorama stupendo!

What a magnificent view!

*b. The interrogatives may be reinforced by **mai**.

Chi mai l' avrebbe creduto?

Who would ever have believed it?

Come mai l' ha fatto?

How did you ever do it?

*c. **Cosa?** for **che cosa?** is frequent in familiar speech, but is not elegant.

Cos' hai fatto?

What have you been doing?

192. The Verb *udire* 'hear.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: **Udire**, **udendo**, **odo**, **udirò** (**udirò**), **udii**, **udito**

PRESENT INDICATIVE

odo	udiamo
odi	udite
ode	odono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

oda	udiamo
oda	udiate
oda	odano

VOCABULARY

il cārcere prison

la cōsta coast

il cuōre heart

il dōso back

l' erōe *m.* hero

la fucilazīōne execution, shooting

l' inganno *m.* deceit

l' īsola *f.* island

la marina navy

il pōrto port

lo sbarco disembarkation

la scintilla spark

la strage butchery

il supplizio punishment, torture

il tradimēto treachery, betrayal

l' ufficiale *m.* officer

la vēla sail; **far vēla** set sail

la vergogna shame

attēndere, **attēsi**, **attēso** await

avviarsi take one's way, start

cavare take out

corrispōndere (*like rispondere*) correspond

effettuare effect

fuggire flee

sbarcare land

scuōtere, **scōssi**, **scōsso** shake

assai much, very, rather

vissuto *p. p.* of vivere

veneziano Venetian

EXERCISE

I

I FRATELLI BANDIERA

I fratelli Attilio ed Emilio Bandiera, figli di nobile famiglia veneziana, erano ufficiali nella marina austriaca. Cuori generosi come quelli, al servizio dello straniero! — Vada la nostra vita, ma scuotiamoci da dosso tanta vergogna — devono aver pensato quei due giovani eroi. E fuggirono. Fuggirono in Grecia, nell' isola di Corfù. Di là, corrispondendo coi loro amici d' Italia, pensarono di effettuare uno sbarco sulle coste della Calabria, per accendere la prima scintilla di guerra in quel di Napoli. Fecero vela con pochi compagni, e sbarcarono al porto di Cotrone.

Ma l' inganno e il tradimento li aspettavano su quella terra; furono presto arrestati e immediatamente condannati alla fucilazione. La strage fu compita nella città di Cosenza. Attesero calmi l' ora fatale, sentendo in cuore la gioia di dare il loro sangue alla patria. E quando i soldati del Borbone vennero a cavarli dal carcere per condurli a morte, essi e sette loro compagni si avviarono al luogo del supplizio, cantando serenamente: *Chi per la patria muor, vissuto è assai.*

II

1. The Bandiera brothers, who were officers in the Austrian navy, wished to shake from their backs the shame of being in the service of the foreigner.
2. What awaited them in the territory of Venice?
3. Deceit and treachery awaited those brothers in the land of the Bourbon.
4. That is not what they hoped.
5. Who knows how many men have given their lives for their country?
6. He who reads the history of Italy must admire her heroes.
7. What a beautiful history! What do you think of it?
8. What I have read of it pleases me very much.
9. The heroes were taken out of prison to be led to the place of punishment.
10. Which of the Bandiera brothers was the older?
11. We sang as we took our

way to the place of punishment. 12. What did you sing? 13. We sang, "He who dies for his country, has lived enough." 14. They were arrested, and what is worse, sentenced to be shot. 15. The officers had them punished, which was not to be expected. 16. They do not believe that what you tell them is true. 17. We have sold our house, and that of our brother. 18. I have taken my new dresses out of the box. 19. I do not like this one; I think the other one is more beautiful.

LESSON XXXIII

PARTICIPLES. THE VERB *PORRE*

193. The Present Participle. The present participle has two forms: a form in *-ante*, *-ente*, which Italian grammar recognizes as the participle, and one in *-ando*, *-endo*, which Italian grammar calls the "gerundive."

a. The form in *-ante*, *-ente*, has the character of adjective, substantive, or verb, and is inflected like an adjective in *e*.

1. As adjective it is in frequent use.

Il grillo parlante
I principi regnanti

The talking cricket
The reigning princes

2. Any present participle with an article before it becomes a substantive, as *l'amante* 'the lover.'

3. As verb it is perhaps less common than the form in *-ando*, *-endo*, and rarely takes an object. It is used, with object, of the verbs *avere*, *contenere*, *fare*, *formare*, *indicare*, *rappresentare*, *tenere*, etc.

I treni aventi wagoni-letto

Trains having sleeping-cars

b. The form in *-ando*, *-endo*, has the character of verb or adverb, and is invariable.

1. As a verb it may replace a clause of time, cause, concession, condition, or simple explanation, and may always govern an object.

Andandq insiēme al teatro, chiac-
chiefavano di molte cose

Trovāndomi quell' autunno a casa,
e ricordāndomi di quel vechio,
andava spesso a visitarlo

Sentēndosi incapace di muoversi,
disse nonostante queste parole
audaci

Rimproverāndolo, potrà forse per-
suaderlo a mutar vita

While they were going to the thea-
ter they chatted of many things

As I happened to be at home that
fall, and to remember the old
man, I went often to visit him

Knowing that he was incapable of
a movement, he yet spoke these
audacious words

If you reprove him, you will per-
haps be able to persuade him to
change his way of life

c. To translate the English present participle,

1. With the verb 'to be,' cf. 102.

2. When standing alone or with object after a noun, it is often
best to use a simple relative clause.

There is a lady **waiting**

And like a wasp **withdrawing** its
sting

C' è una signora **che aspetta**

E come vespa **che ritragge** l' ago

3. After a verb of sensation use the infinitive.

They saw us **coming**

I heard her **singing**

Ci videro **venire**

La sentii **cantare**

d. To translate the English gerund,

1. In general, use the infinitive.

Smoking is forbidden

Working is praying

È vietato di **fumare**

Lavorare è pregare

2. After a preposition, use the form in **-ando, -endo**, without
preposition, unless the latter be essential to the sense; when the
preposition is essential to the sense, retain it, and translate the
participle by the infinitive,

On recognizing him, I hastened to overtake him

Riconoscēndolo, mi spicciai per
raggiungerlo

One cannot make progress without studying	Non si può far progressi senza studiare
We talk of waging war	Parliamo di muover guerra

194. The Past Participle. *a.* The past participle may be used as adjective, noun, or verb.

Tutte le cose narrate si erano succedute con una rapidità maravigliosa	All the things narrated had suc- ceeded each other with a mar- velous rapidity
Il condannato era un povero Vene- ziano	The condemned man was a poor Venetian
Finita la messa	Mass being over

b. Agreement. As noun, as adjective, or when used without auxiliary, the past participle is always inflected. With auxiliary, it agrees —

1. After **essere**, in intransitive and passive verbs (cf. 99).
2. After **avere** (cf. 122) optionally with the object.
- a.* But it is usually invariable —

(1) When the object is part of a set phrase.

/// Ci ha dato fedè	He has pledged his faith to it
Ho avuto fame	I was hungry

(2) When the participle has a dependent infinitive governing a noun object.

Non ho voluto comprare quelle scarpe	I did not wish to buy those shoes
--	-----------------------------------

(3) When **fatto** is substituted for the repetition of some other participle.

Certo negli ultimi venti anni si son salite più montagne, che non s'era fatto in venti secoli	Certainly in the last twenty years more mountains have been scaled than in the preceding twenty centuries
--	--

*non ho voluto comprare, but
non se ho voluto comprare*

PARTICIPLES

§§ 194-195

mi: capite

b. Whereas it will usually agree —

(1) With **ne** or with a direct pronoun object.

Dove li hanno veduti?

Where did they see them?

Mi hai portato (or portati) dei fiori?

Have you brought me any flowers?

Te ne ho portati molti!

I have brought you a great many!

(2) This is true even when the pronoun object belongs with a dependent infinitive.

Li avreste potuti vedere

You might have seen them

3. With reflexives (cf. 104, c, 1).

a. With impersonal forms, the participle agrees if the verb is normally conjugated with **essere**; if it is regularly conjugated with **avere**, there is no agreement.

Si è vissuti troppo

We have lived too long

Si è comprato molti cavalli per la cavalleria

Many horses were bought for the cavalry

b. When the pronoun is a dative "of reference or concern" (cf. 105, b, 3) it is not a true reflexive.

c. **Inversion.** In temporal clauses the past participle and its auxiliary are often inverted, **che** then taking the place of **quando**, **appena**, etc.

Liberato che fu

When he was liberated, as soon as he was liberated

Vinto che l'abbia, lo divorza

When [as soon as] he has conquered it, he devours it

195. Absolute Constructions. These are extremely common in Italian, and may take the place of almost any kind of clause.

Detto fatto

No sooner said than done

Giunto tardi a casa, ed acceso il lume, si accorse subito del furto

Arriving home late, and having lighted the lamp, he at once noticed the theft

*napoli
vinto che*

Dopo occupato l'altipiano, gl' Italiani cominciarono a tirare

After occupying the elevation, the Italians began to fire

a. Cf. 136, *h*; 145, *d*.

196. The verb *porre* 'place.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: *Porre*, *ponendo*, *pongo*, *porrò*, *posi*, *posto*

PRESENT INDICATIVE

pongo	poniamo, ponghiamo
poni	ponete
pone	pongono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

ponga	poniamo, ponghiamo
ponga	poniate
ponga	pongano

VOCABULARY

il bavero	coat-collar	il Turco	Turk
il beneficio	benefit	la vendita	sale
il cannone	cannon	acquistare	acquire
il cittadino	citizen	andarsene	go away
la giacchetta	jacket	appuntare	pin
la giovanetta	young girl	dare il buon anno	wish a Happy New Year
il giovanetto	boy, young man	formicolare	swarm, flock
il gruppo	group	offrire, offersi, offerto	offer
l'incasso <i>m.</i>	receipts	puntare	aim
il metallo	metal	sparare	fire, shoot
il nastro	little ribbon	ciascuno	each, every one
il petto	breast		
lo scudo (<i>dim.</i> scudetto)	shield		
la somma	sum		

EXERCISE

I

IL PICCOLO SCUDO

1. Era il primo giorno dell' anno 1912, l' anno della nostra guerra contro i Turchi. 2. La gente formicolava per le strade e si salutava dandosi il buon anno. 3. Qua e là le persone, che passavano per le vie, erano fermate da gruppi di giovanetti e giovanette

che offrivano, a chi voleva comprarli, dei piccoli scudi di metallo bianco, portanti un nastrino coi tre colori della bandiera nazionale.

4. Su ogni scudo si vedeva un soldato che sparava, e un altro che puntava il cannone. 5. Gli scudetti erano venduti da quei giovani a benefizio dei nostri soldati che combattevano in Libia. 6. Costavano non meno di due soldi, ma ciascuno, prendendoli, poteva offrire quello che voleva. 7. E tutti i cittadini, li acquistavano volentieri, con entusiasmo, e se li mettevano al bavero della giacchetta. 8. Li compravano anche le donne, e se li appuntavano sul vestito. 9. Quasi tutti ebbero ben presto sul petto questi piccoli scudi col nastrino tricolore. 10. L'incasso della loro vendita dette una somma considerevole.

II

1. The soldiers, while fighting in Libya, were led by the officers. 2. The combatants gave up firing, the cannon (having been taken by the enemy. 3. That lady will put the little shield upon her dress. 4. People flocking through the street and saluting each other wished each other a Happy New Year. 5. Having put the little ribbon on the collar of his coat, that citizen gave no less than three lire. 6. On New Year's Day of the year 1912, shields were sold for the benefit of the Italian soldiers. 7. As we entered the room, we found there a young girl singing. 8. We stayed, because we liked to hear her singing. 9. Having told us not to wait for them, they went away without speaking to him. 10. The shields bought, all soon had them at their breasts. 11. Little shields, on which was seen a soldier shooting, were offered by groups of young girls. 12. Do not go home before speaking to her. 13. Whoever wished to buy one, would pay not less than two cents. 14. By giving her two lire he won the approval of [made himself praised by] all the young people. 15. Have you bought a shield as you passed along the streets? 16. My brothers being both in Libya, I have bought two of them. 17. Having bought them, I shall give you one.

DIALOGO

DAL CALZOLAIO

— Ho da farmi fare un paio di scarpe. Andiamo in quella bottega di calzolaio ch'è sull'angolo di Via Parione. Ho sentito che quello lavora molto bene.

— Lo conosco di nome. Fa sempre le scarpe di lusso a una signora di mia conoscenza.

— Ecco il suo negozio. È davvero troppo grande ed elegante da chiamarlo bottega.

— Buon giorno, Signore. Che desiderano?

— Io vorrei ordinare un paio di scarpe bianche, alte.

— Alte non si fanno le bianche, Signora. Ne ho viste delle signore americane che le portano, ma qui in Italia non si trovano mai. Però, potrei fargliene un paio su misura. Ma bisognerebbe prima fare delle forme. Prendiamo la misura del suo piede. Ecco presa la misura. Come le vuole? Di pelle?

— No, di tela, di buona qualità. Le porterò domani una mia scarpa per confrontarla colla forma. Ho sempre paura quando vado per la prima volta da un calzolaio, che mi faccia le scarpe troppo larghe e troppo corte.

— Non dubiti, Signora. Colle forme ben fatte non si può sbagliare.

— Mi dia due paia di stringhe, e faccia attenzione che non scricchiolino le scarpe. Questo paio che ho fu bagnato dalla pioggia la settimana scorsa, e d'allora scricchiolano ch'è un orrore.

— Ci baderò, Signora. E i tacchi come li vuole? Di tela?

— No, di cuoio, e piuttosto bassi. I tacchi alti sciupano i piedi.

— Baderò a tutto, Signora. Sono sicuro che rimarrà soddisfatta. Quanto al prezzo, ci accomoderemo quando saprò quanto tempo ci vuole per far le forme. Farò un prezzo discreto da venti a venticinque lire.

— Vabbene. Buon giorno.

— Arrivederla, Signora.

LESSON XXXIV

GENDER OF NOUNS. THE VERB USCIRE

197. Gender Determined by Form. *a.* Cf. 80, *b.*

b. Feminine are the nouns ending in *ia*, *si* (*except il brindisi* 'toast'), and accented *ice*; and abstract nouns when accented on the last syllable: *la specie* 'kind,' *la radice* 'root,' *la libertà* 'liberty.'

198. Gender Determined by Meaning. *a.* Cf. 80, *a.* Masculine are also —

1. Names of lakes; of mountains, *except le Alpi, le Ande, la Sierra Nevada*, and a few others; of rivers, unless ending in *a* (cf. *b*, 2); of empires, kingdoms, and provinces, unless ending in *a* or *de* (*except il Bengala*).

2. Names of trees, *except la quercia* 'oak,' *la palma* 'palm,' and *la vite* 'grapevine,' which are feminine, and *l'elce* 'ilex,' of common gender.

3. Names of metals, *except la latta* 'tin.'

4. Names of months, and of all days *except domēnica*.

5. Other parts of speech used substantively.

b. Cf. 80, *a.* Feminine are also —

1. Names of fruits, which usually correspond to the names of the trees. If the latter end in *o*, *o* changes to *a*; if in *e*, there is merely a change of gender.

Il pēSCO, la pēSCA, (peach-tree)
Il nōce, la nōce

The peach-tree, the peach
The walnut-tree, the walnut

EXCEPTIONS. The following names, of masculine gender, are identical for tree and fruit:

l' ananasso pineapple	il limone lemon
il cedro lime	il pistacchio pistachio nut
il dattero date	il pomo apple
il fico fig	il ribes currant

2. Names of cities, except il **Cairo** 'Cairo'; and of rivers ending in **a**, except il **Niagara**, il **Volga**, and a few others.

la Lôira the Loire	il Danubio the Danube
---------------------------	------------------------------

199. Nouns having Two Genders with Different Meanings:

il cârcere imprisonment, prison	la cârcere , oftener le cârceri , prison
il dramma drama	la dramma dram
il fine purpose	la fine (il fine) end
il pianeta planet	la pianeta priest's cope
il prigione prisoner	la prigione prison
il tema theme	la tema fear

a. Some nouns, such as **fonte** 'spring,' **fôlgore** 'thunderbolt,' **trave** 'beam,' etc., are of common gender without change of meaning.

200. Gender of Names of Animals. **a.** Of such as change their form with change of gender, those ending in **o** change **o** to **a**, and those in **e** change **e** to **essa**, rarely **a**:

cavallo , cavalla , horse	gatto , gatta , cat
cignale , cignala , wild boar	leone , leonessa , lion
colombo , colomba , dove	lupo , lupa , wolf
elefante , elefantessa , elephant	pavone , pavona , pavonessa , peacock

1. Irregular are —

cane , cagna , dog	gâmbro , gamberessa , crawfish
gallo , gallina , cock, hen	and others

2. Defective are —

toro , vacca	bull, cow
montone , ariete ; pëcora	ram; (sheep), ewe
verre ; trôia or scrofa	boar; sow

b. Some of those ending in e or u are of common gender, and distinguished only by the article.

il ~~serpe~~, la ~~serpe~~, serpent il gru, la gru, crane

c. Others have but one gender for both sexes.

1. Masculine are —

il coniglio rabbit

il delfino dolphin

il luccio pike

lo scarafaggio beetle

il serpente serpent (la serpe)

il sōrcio mouse

il tōpo rat

il tōrdo thrush

2. Feminine are —

l' āquila eagle

la balēna whale

la formica ant

la lucērtola lizard

la mōsca fly

la pantera panther

la rōndine swallow

la scīmīa monkey

la tōrtora turtle-dove

la vīpera viper

la vōlpe fox

201. Names denoting Sex in Human Beings :

maschio, fēmmīna, male, female

padre, madre, father, mother

figlio, figlia, son, daughter

fratello, sorella, brother, sister

nonno, nonna, grandfather, grandmother

il nipote, la nipote, grandson, granddaughter; nephew, niece

zio, zia, uncle, aunt

cugino, cugina, cousin

suocero, suocera, father-in-law, mother-in-law

gēnero, nuora, son-in-law, daughter-in-law

cognato, cognata, brother-in-law, sister-in-law

fratellastro, half-brother

patrigno, matrigna, stepfather, stepmother

figliastro, figliastra, stepson, stepdaughter

compare, madrina, godfather, godmother

figlioccio, figlioccia, godson, goddaughter

202. Masculines in a. The following nouns, though ending in a, are of masculine gender :

Il boia 'executioner,' il duca 'duke,' il monarca 'monarch,' il poeta 'poet,' qualcosa 'something'; nouns in -ista denoting the

professions, sects, etc., when referring to men; ~~il colera~~ 'cholera,' ~~lo scia~~ 'shah,' ~~il sofà~~ 'sofa,' and some other words of foreign origin; ~~l' enigma~~ 'enigma,' ~~il problema~~ 'problem,' and other words from the Greek in ~~-ma~~; and many geographical names.

203. Feminine Forms of Words Expressing Professions, Rank, or Character.

~~abate~~ abbot, ~~abbadessa~~ or ~~badessa~~ abbess
 barone baron, ~~baronessa~~ baroness
 cameriere waiter, ~~cameriera~~ waitress, chambermaid, stewardess
 canonico canon, ~~canonichessa~~ canoness
~~cantore~~ singer, ~~cantante~~ (~~cantatrice~~)
~~capitano~~ captain, ~~capitanessa~~ (~~burl.~~), captain's wife
 conte count, ~~contessa~~ countess
 diavolo devil, ~~diavolessa~~
 dio god, ~~dea~~, ~~diva~~, goddess
 dottore doctor, learned person, ~~dottora~~, ~~dottoressa~~ (~~often burl.~~)
 duca duke, ~~duchessa~~ duchess
 eroe hero, ~~eroina~~ heroine
 fante page, ~~fantesca~~ maidservant
 fattore steward, (~~fattora~~), ~~fattoressa~~, steward's wife
 filosofo philosopher, ~~filosofa~~ (~~burl.~~), ~~filosofessa~~
 forestiere foreigner, ~~forestiera~~
 governatore governor, ~~governatrice~~; ~~governatora~~ governor's wife
 imperatore emperor, ~~imperatrice~~ empress
 istitutore teacher, tutor, ~~istitutrice~~ teacher, governess
 marchese marquis, ~~marchesa~~ marchioness
 medico physician, ~~medichessa~~
 padrone master, ~~padrona~~ mistress
 papa pope, ~~papezza~~
 patriarca patriarch, ~~patriarchessa~~
 pittore painter, ~~pittrice~~
 principe prince, ~~principessa~~ princess
 priore prior, ~~priora~~, ~~prioressa~~, prioress
 professore professor ~~professoressa~~
 profeta prophet, ~~profetessa~~ prophetess
 re king, ~~regina~~ queen

sacerdote priest, sacerdotessa priestess
 scolare scholar, pupil, scolara
 servo servant, serva
 stiratore ironer, presser, stiratora, stiratrice
 traditore traitor, traditora, traditrice traitress
 uditore auditor, uditrice

204. The Verb *uscire* 'go out.'PRINCIPAL PARTS: *uscire, uscendo, esco, uscirò, usciì, uscito*

PRESENT INDICATIVE		PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE		IMPERATIVE	
esco	usciamo	esca	usciamo		usciamo
esci	uscite	esca	usciate	esci	uscite
esce	escono	esca	escano	esca	escano

VOCABULARY

acciaio steel	rame copper
argento silver	Reno Rhine
ferro iron	scarafaggio beetle
fico fig	Senna Seine
gallina hen	socialista socialist
gēnero son-in-law	suocero, -a father-in-law, mother-in-law
gru crane	Tamigi Thames
istitutore, -trice teacher	tema theme
latta tin	Tevere Tiber
limone lemon	traditore, -trice traitor, traitress
pēcora sheep	uva grape
noce walnut-tree; nut, walnut	vacca cow
nuora daughter-in-law	vite grapevine
olmo elm	mācchia thicket, brambles
oro gold	cōgliere, cogliendo, colgo, coglierò,
padrone landlord, proprietor	colsi, colto gather
pero pear-tree	uscire di go out of
pēso peach-tree	
problema problem	
quercia oak	generalmente usually

EXERCISE

I

1. Beetles are usually black. 2. The grape is the fruit of the vine. 3. He has bought himself three cows and some hens. 4. Gold and silver are precious metals. 5. It is said that figs are not gathered from brambles. 6. My father-in-law and mother-in-law, having risen early, left this morning at seven. 7. The Spaniard aimed the gun at the cranes. 8. Grapes are gathered from grapevines, peaches from peach-trees, pears from pear-trees, and walnuts from walnut-trees. 9. His theme was the problem of the socialists. 10. The cows are hungry. 11. What kind of fruit is there on the table? There are figs and lemons. 12. Sheep and cows are usually bought at the village.

II

1. Iron, steel, tin and copper are not precious metals. 2. My son-in-law, having gathered some walnuts and having given us some, has carried the rest home in his basket. 3. As I went out of the house, I saw them returning. 4. At the end of the year 1870 the hostile soldiers came out of Rome. 5. Having gone away before half past ten, I did not hear them talking about it. 6. Hurry, sir, if you wish to arrive before the train leaves. 7. Here are some grapes; let us gather some. 8. I do not doubt the proprietor will permit us to carry some home. 9. Traitors and traitresses are to be punished in whatever places they are found. 10. Elms and oaks are found in America. 11. The Rhine, the Thames, the Seine, and the Tiber are rivers of Europe.

LESSON XXXV

INDEFINITES. THE VERB SCEGLIERE

205. Alphabetical List of Indefinites.

alcuno, -i, -a, -e 'some,' 'any.' (Adj. or pron., used often with **non** to mean 'not any.')

altrettanto, -i, -a, -e (pron. or adj.) 'as much more,' 'as many more'

altri (pron.) 'another,' used of persons

altri . . . altri (pron.) 'some . . . others,' used of persons (also sing)

altro (pron.) 'something else,' 'anything else'

altrui (pron.) 'to, of, or for another,' or 'others,' used of persons, and never in the nominative

certuni, -e (pron.) 'certain ones,' used of persons

checcchè, checcchessia (pron.) 'whatever,' 'anything whatever'

chi . . . chi (pron.) 'some . . . others,' 'one . . . another'

chicchessia, chiunque (pron.) 'whoever,' 'any one whatever'

ciascuno, -a, ciascheduno, -a (pron.) 'each one,' used of persons

cosiffatto, -a, -i, -e (adj.) 'such'

nessuno, -a, niuno, -a (pron. or adj.) 'not one,' 'no one'

ogni (adj.) 'every'

ognuno, -a (pron.) 'every one,' used of persons

parecchi, -ie (pron. or adj.) 'several'

per quanto (adv.) 'however'

i più (pron.) 'most,' 'most people'

qualche (adj.) 'some'

qualcheduno, -a, qualcuno, -a (pron.) 'some one'

qualcosa (pron.) 'something'

qualsiasi, qualsisia, qualsivoglia (adj.) 'whatever,' 'any whatever,' never used in the nominative

qualunque (adj.) 'whatever,' 'any whatever'

tale, -i (adj. or pron.) 'such'

tale . . . quale 'such . . . as'

tanto, -i, -a, -e 'so much,' 'so many'

tanto . . . quanto 'as much . . . as'

uno, -a (pron.) 'one'; (adj.) 'one,' 'a single'

un chē, un non sō chē 'a something,' 'something or other'
 una cōsa 'something,' clear in the speaker's mind
 un tale (adj.) 'such a'; (pron.) 'so-and-so,' 'such a one'
 l' uno e l' altro 'both'
 nè l' uno nè l' altro 'neither'
 l' uno o l' altro 'either'

X // veruno, -a 'no one,' 'any one,' used in negative or doubtful sentences or expressions of doubt

a. An indefinite followed by an adjective requires **di**.

Niente **di** nuovo
 Qualcōsa **di** bello

Nothing new
 Something beautiful

206. Alcuno, etc., 'some,' 'any.' a. **Alcuno** is either adjective or pronoun. In affirmative sentences its use is confined chiefly to the plural.

Alcuni lo dicono
 Ho **alcuni** libri russi

Some say so
 I have **some** Russian books

1. With **non**, **alcuno** in the singular regularly means 'none,' 'not any,' and follows the noun.

Nella regione devastata dal terremoto, **non** rimane più casa **alcuna**

In the region devastated by the earthquake, there is not a house remaining

2. 'Anything,' 'anybody,' in questions, are translated by the negative indefinites (cf. 210) **nulla**, **nessuno**, etc.

È venuto **nessuno**?
 Di quest' affare ne sa **nulla**?

Has **any one** come?
 Do you know **anything** of this matter?

3. 'Any one else' is **ogni altro**.

Ha fatto più **di ogni altro**

He has done more than **any one else**

4. For the translation of 'any' as pronoun, cf. 124.

b. Qualcuno, qualcheduno, are singular substantive forms, meaning 'some one,' commonly preferred to alcuno in affirmative sentences.

C'è qualcuno che vorrebbe parlarle ~~There is some one~~ who would like to speak to you

Sceglia qualcuno di questi quadri Choose ~~some one~~ of these pictures

c. Qualche, certo, are adjectives meaning 'some,' 'certain,' 'a certain.'

1. Qualche is used only in the singular, even when the idea is plural.

A quel pōvero si dēve **qualche** aiuto That poor man should have some help

~~Vi stettero qualche giorno~~ They stayed there some days

2. Certo requires **un** in the singular.

Certe abitudini sono da riprovarsi **Certain** habits are blameworthy
Un certo Ciceruacchio menò i ~~A~~ **certain** Ciceruacchio led the
Romani alla rivolta Romans to revolt

d. Qualcosa, meaning 'something,' is always used substantively.

Mi hanno detto che ha qualcosa per me They tell me you have something for me

1. When referring to something in the mind, 'something' is translated una cosa.

Mi permetta di dirle una cosa Allow me to tell you something

2. In an abstract sense, it is translated **un che, un non so che, un certo che**.

Nella sua prosa c'è sempre un che di artificioso In his prose there is always ~~some-~~thing artificial

In questo paesaggio trovo un non so che di pittoresco I find ~~something~~ picturesque in this landscape

e. 'Some . . . others' is translated by *alcuni . . . altri, altri . . . altri, gli uni . . . gli altri, chi . . . chi*, and sometimes *quale . . . quale*. *Chi* and *quale* take the verb in the singular.

<i>Alcuni</i> combattēvano sēmpre, <i>altri</i> la dāvano vinta	Some continued to fight, others gave up
<i>Chi</i> lo compiangeva, <i>chi</i> lo deri- deva	Some pitied him, others laughed at him
<i>Qual</i> fior cadēa sul lēmbō, <i>qual</i> sulle trecce bionde //	Some flowers fell on her robe's hem, some on her blond tresses

207. *Uno* 'one,' etc. a. The pronoun 'one,' in the general sense of 'we,' 'you,' 'they,' 'people,' is translated by *uno*, or by the third person of the reflexive (cf. 106, b).

Quand' <i>uno</i> si trōva in un paēse straniēro, dēve studiarne i cos- tumi	When one is in a foreign country, he should study its customs
--	--

Dōve si *entra*? Where does one enter?

b. Before a proper name, *un* is equivalent to *un-certo*.

Fu il tērzo triūmviro <i>un</i> Carlo Armellini	The third triumvir was a certain Carlo Armellini
--	---

c. *Uno* sometimes means 'one single,' 'one and the same.'

La pōvera vēcchia non ha <i>un</i> sōldo	The poor old woman has not a (single) penny
Amōre e 'l cōr gentil son <i>una</i> cōsa [DANTE]	Love and the gentle heart are one same thing [ROSSETTI]

i. In the feminine singular it modifies some word like *azione* 'action' or *truffa* 'trick,' understood. Cf. 146, k, 1.

Ce *ne* ha fatta *una* He has played us one of his tricks

d. 'The . . . one,' with an adjective between, often takes a demonstrative where it would not be needed in English; the word 'one' is omitted in translation.

Non mi piace quest' ombrellino.	I do not like this parasol. I shall
Prendo quello scuro	take the dark one
Codesta pera non è buona; prenda	This pear is not good; take the
quell' altra	other one
Mi piacciono quelle belle	I like those pretty ones (f.)

e. 'Each one,' 'every one,' are translated by **ciascuno**, **ciascheduno**, and **ognuno**, pronoun. **Ogni**, 'each,' 'every,' is an adjective. For **tutti**, 'everybody,' **tutto**, 'everything,' cf. 160.

Ciascuno di quei principi fu degno	Each of those princes was worthy
d' onore	of honor
Ogni casa aveva un giardinetto	Each house had a little garden
In ogni caso	In any case
Ognuno agisce come crede	Every one acts as he thinks best

1. 'Apiece' is translated by **per uno**, **per ciascuno**.

Diède loro sei lire per uno	He gave them six lire apiece
------------------------------------	-------------------------------------

f. **Uno** correlative with **altro**.

Saper l' un dell' altro	To know one from the other
L' uno e l' altro	Both
L' un lito e l' altro vidi infin la	Both shores I saw as far as Spain
Spagna	
Nè l' uno nè l' altro	Neither
L' uno o l' altro	Either
Gli uni . . . gli altri	Some . . . others

Used reciprocally, cf. 104, *b*.

1. Except in the phrase **gli uni . . . gli altri**, **uno** has no plural. Its plural is supplied by **alcuni**.

208. Altro 'other,' etc. *a.* **Altri** is a singular pronoun, referring to persons; it means 'another,' 'some one else,' and is often used in contrast.

Nè tu nè altri	Neither you nor any one else
---------------------------	------------------------------

b. Altri is like **altri**, except that it may have a plural meaning, and is never nominative.

Non si deve bramare i beni. **altri** One should not covet the goods of others

c. Altro as pronoun refers only to things, and means 'something else,' 'anything else,' 'else.'

Ci vuole **altro**? Is **something else** needed?

Nient' **altro** Nothing **else**

Che **altro**? What **else**?

Non desidero **altro** I do not wish **anything else**

1. With the article, or in the plural, it refers to persons.

L' **altra** è colei che s' ancise The other is she who killed herself for love
amorosa

Un **altro**, che forata avea la gola Another, who had his throat pierced

2. With numbers, **altro** usually precedes.

Altri quattro Four **others**

d. Altro as adjective means 'other,' and has some special uses.

1. With **noi** and **voi** it is reënforcing.

Noi altri Russi **We** Russians

Voi altri Ingleſi **You** English

2. In the partitive construction it means 'some more.'

Desidera dell' **altro** vino? Do you wish some more wine?

Dell' **altre** acqua calda, per piacere **Some more** hot water, please

Le piacciono le susine? Si serva delle **altre** Do you like the plums? Take **some more**

3. Expressions of time.

L' **altro** anno **Last** year

Quest' **altra** settimana **Next** week

4. For its correlatively and reciprocally, cf. 207, *f*.

5. For its adverbial use, cf. 215, *e*; 216, *f*.

e. Altrettanto, a pronoun referring to things, means 'as much *or* as many more.'

Diède cinque soldi al ragazzo e altrettanti alla sua sorellina	She gave five pennies to the boy, and as many more to his little sister
Legò tre mila lire a lui, e altret- tanto a me	He left three thousand lire to him, and as much more to me
Le auguro cento di questi giorni. Grazie, altrettanto a Lei	I wish you many happy returns of the day. Thank you, the same to you

209. Some More General Indefinites. a. Tale 'such,' **tanto** 'so much,' etc.

1. **Tale, un tale**, means 'one,' 'a certain one.'

Tal si partì da cantare alleluia	One left off singing alleluia
Quel tal Sandro, autore d' un ro- manzetto	A certain Sandro, author of a tale

2. 'Such a' is translated **un tale**.

Non potevano continuare a com- battere dopo una tale sconfitta	They could not continue fighting after such a defeat
---	--

3. **Tal quale** may mean 'a kind of' or 'like.'

Questi uccelli producono una tal qual armonia che piace	These birds produce a kind of pleasing harmony
Come gli somiglia il suo gemello. È tal quale!	How much his twin brother re- sembles him! He is exactly like

4. **Tale . . . quale** means 'such . . . as,' and in long poetic comparisons **quale** often precedes.

Tal mi fec' io quai son color che stanno, Per non intender quel ch' è lor risposto	I became as those who stand still because of not understanding what is replied to them
Qual è quel cane ch' abbaiano agugna . . . Cotal si fecer quelle facce lorde	Like the dog which barking craves . . . such those foul faces became

5. **Tanto . . . quanto** are similarly correlative, and mean 'as much . . . as.'

Quanto gli prestai, tanto mi restituì	He returned me as much as I lent him
---	---

6. Special uses of **tanto**.

Ai tanti del mese	On such a day of the month
Un tanto la settimana	So much per week
Viisò la Turchia agli ottanta tanti	He visited Turkey in the eighties

b. **Chiunque**, **qualunque**, etc., 'whoever,' 'whatever,' 'any whatever,' etc.

1. **Chiunque** and **chicchessia** are pronouns referring to persons; **chicchessia** and **checchessia** are not used in the nominative. **Checchè** is preferred to **checchessia**.

Non lo farò, chiunque me lo consiglia	Whoever advises it, I shall not do it
Non lo darei a chicchessia	I should not give it to anybody at all
Checchè avvenga, non abbandoneranno la posizione	Whatever happens, they will not abandon the position

2. **Qualunque**, **qualsivoglia**, and **qualsiasi** are adjectives.

Garibaldi ritirandosi da Roma, si sarebbe rifugiato in qualsiasi paesetto	Garibaldi, when retreating from Rome, would have taken refuge in any village whatever
Qualunque ne sia il motivo, è un'azione indegna	Whatever may be its motive, it is an unworthy action

3. **Per quanto** is an adverb, meaning 'however.'

Per quanto il capitano fosse magnanimo, non potè perdonare un tale insulto	However magnanimous the captain might be, he could not forgive such an insult
---	--

c. Cf. 169, h.

210. Negative Indefinites. *a.* **Nessuno, niuno, veruno**, are pronouns or adjectives referring to persons or things. **Nessuno** is the most common.

Nessun erpe fu mai più valoroso di Orlando	No hero was ever braver than Roland
Nessuno ci si mosse	No one stirred

1. **Nulla, niente**, are pronouns meaning 'nothing.'

Non c'è nulla da mangiare	There is nothing to eat
Non voglio nulla	I wish nothing
Di niente o niente	Not at all, don't mention it

2. When one of these negatives follows the verb, **non** must precede. If the negative precedes, **non** is not required.

Non fa niente	Never mind
Non ci si vede niente	There is nothing to be seen
Nessuno era arrivato prima delle sette	No one had arrived before seven
Non c'è nessuno de' miei	Not one of my relatives is here

3. Used absolutely, without verb, these words are negative in meaning.

Chi c'è? Nessuno	Who is there? No one
-------------------------	----------------------

4. Cf. 206, *a*, 1.

211. The Verb *scegliere* 'choose.'

PRINCIPAL PARTS: **Scēgliere, scegliendo, scelgo, sceglierò,**
scēlsi, scelto

PRESENT INDICATIVE		PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE	
scelgo	scegliamo, scelghiamo	scelga	scegliamo
scegli	scegliete	scelga	scegliate
sceglie	scelgono	scelga	scelgano

VOCABULARY

la carezza	caress	accorgersi, accorsi, accorto	perceive
la chicca	sweetmeat	avvezzare	accustom
la collera	anger	correggere, corressi, corretto	correct
la colpa	fault, blame	correggersi di un difetto	correct a fault
il difetto	defect, fault		
la fede	faith	durare	last, hold out
i genitori	parents	principiare	begin
il nipotino	little nephew	rimproverare	reprove (rimprovero)
la pace	peace	riuscire (like uscire)	succeed; non
il rimprovero	reproof	mi riesce	I can't
il segno	sign	tornar conto	be of advantage
allora	then	alcuno, -i, -a, -e	some, any
dentro di	within, inside of	altrettanto	as much more
dovunque	wherever	nessuno	no, not any, no one
spesso	often	niente	nothing

EXERCISE

I

DAL GIORNALE DI GIGI

Tutte le volte che ho da fare qualche cosa di nuovo, dico subito dentro di me — Non mi riesce! — e trovo gran fatica a principiare. Ma appena ho cominciato, spesso mi accorgo che quello che mi pareva impossibile è possibilissimo, e che, qualche volta, è anche facile. Ho poco fede nelle mie forze, e voglio correggermi di questo difetto.

Tutti mi rimproverano perchè sono troppo facile a lasciarmi prendere dalla collera. Se tutti mi dicono questo, è segno che deve esser vero. Specialmente la mamma non mi dà mai pace coi suoi rimproveri. Ma la mamma la voglio contentarla, e ora che son grande mi voglio correggere.

Questa è una cosa che non la sa nessuno; ma io la so. Una gran parte di quelle carezze che faccio ai nonni e ai miei genitori,

le faccio perchè mi torna conto. Ma io non ci ho colpa. Mi ci devono avere avvezzato da piccino, e più di tutti mi ci deve avere avvezzato la povera zia Francesca, buon' anima, che mi diceva sempre — Se mi dai un bacio, ti do una chicca. — E io, allora, duravo a dargliene finchè ci eran chicche; ma quando le chicche della zia Francesca eran finite, finivano subito i baci del nipotino Gigi.

- II
1. Whenever one has something new to do, one should not say "I can't do it."
 2. No one could make me begin it.
 3. Do not say it to any one.
 4. In this book there is nothing good.
 5. My parents gave my little brother three cents, and they gave me as many more.
 6. Wherever you go, you will find no one who loves you as they do [like them].
 7. Everybody reproved him for being easily made angry.
 8. Has any one spoken of it to you? No one.
 9. However bad your defects may be, you can correct them.
 10. Do you wish anything else? Nothing else.
 11. I had already perceived it last year.
 12. I was not speaking of this book, but of the new one.
 13. Let us try to correct our faults.
 14. Some praised him for accustoming himself to working; others reproved him for not correcting his faults.
 15. They will never give you peace as long as you let yourself become angry easily.
 16. But it is not your fault.
 17. Have you any nuts? Let me give you some more.
 18. No, thank you, but I should like some more coffee.
 19. Come with us, gentlemen; have you noticed what time it is?
 20. However difficult those lessons are, he will have them learned within a few days.

III

L' AUTOMOBILE

Il mio amico Giacomo ha comprato un' automobile. Siccome non sa ancora troppo bene condurla, gli capita di quando in quando qualche malanno. La prima volta ch'è rimasto in panna, fu per mancanza di benzina, il che può succedere anche agli automobilisti

esperti. Un'altra volta una persona sul marciapiede gli fece segno che uno dei copertoni delle ruote era consumato. Era sgonfio. Immediatamente dopo, uno schianto come un tuono lo avvertì che un altro pneumatico era scoppiato. Si dovè fermare dieci minuti a pompare. Poi tirò via, sonando la cornetta da svegliare i Sette Dormienti. Poco dopo gli è successo un accidente, di quelli gravi. Fu così: Il mantice, che generalmente lo teneva giù, era stato alzato per la pioggia; perciò non poteva vedere bene come al solito. A un tratto s'accorse che un bambino gli traversava la strada proprio davanti. Cercando di evitarlo, dette il freno, ma il freno, per la prima volta, non andava. Allora cercò di sterzare più presto che poteva, ma nell'eccitamento girò un po' troppo il volante; e l'automobile, che stava in cima alla salita, svoltò improvvisamente a destra, andando a sbattere su quel po' di muricciuolo all'orlo della strada, il quale cedette, e l'automobile slittò giù fino al fiume. Si fermò per fortuna proprio sull'orlo del torrente, e benchè tutti fossero spaventati da morire, non ci fu nessuna disgrazia.

LESSON XXXVI

ADVERBS. THE VERB VALERE

212. Position of Adverbs. *a.* Rules for position are not very strict, but most adverbs, except non, follow the verb.

Non lo trovò

He did not find it

Lo trovò **immediatamente**

He found it immediately

b. An adverb modifying an adjective, another adverb, or a phrase, usually precedes.

È **troppo** difficile

It is too difficult

Riusci **singolarmente** bene

He succeeded singularly well

Viaggiando, **specialmente** con un compagno simpatico, se ne gode moltissimo

When one travels, especially with a congenial companion, one has much enjoyment

213. Comparison of Adverbs. Cf. 115, 116, 117.

214. Adverbs of Manner. *a.* These are almost all formed by adding **-mente** to the feminine of the adjective.

Premuroso 'eager,' **premurosamente** 'eagerly'

1. If the feminine of the adjective ends in **-le** or **-re**, the **-e** is dropped before **-mente**.

Facile, **facilmente**; **particolare**, **particolarmente**

2. Certain adverbs ending in **-one**, **-oni**, indicate the posture of the body.

Bocconi 'flat on one's face,' **carponi** 'on all fours'

b. A few adverbs end in **-i** or **-e**; as **altrimenti** 'otherwise,' **bene** 'well,' **volentieri** 'willingly,' etc.

c. Certain adjectives in **-o** are used as adverbs; as **alto** 'high,' **presto** 'quick,' **sicuro** 'sure,' **sùbito** 'sudden.'

1. Certain others, when so used, continue to agree with their noun. Such are **caro**, **grande**, **mezzo**, **solo**, **tutto**, **primo**, and **ultimo**.

Mezza morta	Half dead
Desidero due solo paia	I wish only two pairs
Questa catena l'ho pagata cara	I paid dear for this chain

2. **Bello** is used adverbially along with the past participle.

La roba bell' e fatta	Ready-made goods
Lo scorpione era bell' e morto	The scorpion was good and dead

3. Certain adverbial phrases are used adjectively to modify nouns.

Il piede di dietro	The hind foot
Un uomo per bene	An honorable man
Una cosa da nulla	A trifle

215. Adverbs of Affirmation. *a.* **Sì** is 'yes' in answer to a question.

Verrà stasera? Sì	Shall you come this evening? Yes
--------------------------	----------------------------------

b. Già is 'yes' in simple confirmation or agreement.

Piùve a diròtto. Già It is pouring. Yes, it is

1. In such confirmatory phrases as 'I think so,' 'I hope so,' 'so' is expressed by *lo* (cf. 100, e, 1).

Lo spero I hope so

c. *Pure* adds emphasis, and is equivalent to 'do,' 'pray do.'

Venga pure Do come

d. *Pur troppo* assents with regret, meaning 'only too much,' 'only too well,' 'yes, unfortunately.'

Lo conosco? *Pur troppo* Do you know him? Only too well

e. The following are emphatic affirmatives:

Altro!	By all means!
Appunto	Exactly
Davvero	Very true
Certo, sicuro, sì bene	Yes, indeed
Lo credo!	I believe you!

f. *Ma sì* affirms while contradicting.

Non è mai stato in Amērica, credo. You have never been in America,
Ma sì, più volte I think. O yes, several times

g. *Altro che* not only answers in the affirmative, but adds something not implied in the question.

Non s'è visto ancora il mēdico? Nothing has been seen yet of the
Altro che visto! C'è! doctor? Better than that! He's
here!

Conosce quella signorina? Altro Do you know that young lady?
che conoscerla! È mia sorella! Rather! She is my sister!

h. *Signora sì* and *Signor no* are equally admissible with *Sì Signora* and *No Signore*, though less usual.

216. Adverbs of Negation. *a.* **Non** immediately precedes the verb, or the object pronoun if there be one.

Non voglio	I will not, I refuse
Non lo trovò	He did not find it

b. **Non . . . che** means 'only,' 'but.'

Non ne desidero che due	I wish only two of them
---------------------------------------	--------------------------------

i. In the locutions **non . . . che**, **non . . . mai**, the verb stands between.

Non lo fece mai	He never did it
Non chiede che un po' di pane	She asks only a bit of bread

c. 'Neither . . . nor' is **nè . . . nè**.

Nè più nè meno	Neither more nor less
------------------------------	-----------------------

d. **No** is 'no' spoken in reply to a question, and is used instead of **non** in the phrases **o no** 'or not,' **se no** 'if not,' and sometimes in antithetical phrases, where a part only of the proposition is contradicted.

Verrò domani, o no ?	Shall I come to-morrow or not?
Se no , verrò domani l'altro	If not, I will come day after to-morrow
Prendo il bianco e il marrone, ma non il rosso	I'll take the white one and the brown, but not the red one
Vengo volentieri al teatro, ma in platea no	I will go to the theater gladly, but not in the orchestra seats

i. **Di** is required with the adverbs of affirmation or negation in such expressions as the following:

Crede di no	I think not
Rispose di sì	He said yes

e. For the negatives 'nothing,' 'nobody,' etc., cf. 210.

i. **Niente** is often used adjectively in conversation to mean 'not any.'

Niente frutta, grazie	No fruit, thank you
------------------------------	---------------------

f. The principal adverbs of negation are

no no, not
non not
non . . . mai, non . . . giammai never
non . . . più no longer, never again
non . . . punto, non . . . mica (*contradicting*) not at all
niente affatto nothing at all, not at all
per niente not in the least
tutt' altro by no means, on the contrary

Non lo farò più	I shall never do it again
Non lavora più	He is no longer working
Suo zio non le legò niente affatto	Her uncle left her nothing at all
Ma non c'è nulla , proprio nulla	But there is nothing there, nothing at all
Pensa insomma di farlo? Per niente!	You <i>are</i> thinking of doing it after all? Not for anything
Le dà noia se apro la finestra?	Will it disturb you if I open the window?
Tutt' altro ; ci fa caldo	On the contrary, it is too warm here

1. **Mai** and **punto**, used absolutely and without verb, have negative value; but **mai** alone in comparative or interrogative sentences means 'ever.'

Le piace questo paesaggio? Punto	Do you like this view? Not at all
Il migliore ch'io abbia mai visto	The best I ever saw
Ha mai visitato la Cina? Mai	Have you <i>ever</i> visited China? Never

217. Adverbs of Place. *a.* 'Here,' 'there,' etc., when at all emphatic, are expressed by the following adverbs, which are to be carefully distinguished according to whether the place indicated is near the speaker, near the person spoken to, or remote from either.

1. **Near the speaker:** **qua** means 'here,' 'here in this room or place'; **qui** means 'here by me'; **quaggiù, quassù**, mean respectively 'down here,' 'up here.'

2. Near the person addressed: *costì, costà*, 'there where you are'; *costaggiù* 'down there where you are'; *costassù* 'up there where you are.'

3. Remote from either: *là, colà, lì, ivi, quivi*, 'there' (*là* and *colà* being further removed than *lì*); *laggiù* 'down there' and *lassù* 'up there'; *indi, quindi*, 'thence.'

4. Special uses: *dì qua, quaggiù*, mean 'here below,' 'on this earth'; *dì là, costà, lassù*, 'above,' 'in the other world.'

Essere più <i>dì là</i> che <i>dì qua</i>	To be more dead than alive
<i>Di lì</i> a due giorni	Two days from then
Stare <i>lì lì</i> per far una cosa	To be on the very point of doing a thing
Essere in <i>là</i> cogli anni	To be well on in years

b. When not emphatic, or when referring to a place already mentioned, 'here,' 'there,' and 'thence' are expressed respectively by *ci, vi, ne* (cf. 126).

1. Special uses of *ci*. *Ci* is used very often with apparent redundancy, as if to reinforce or enrich the meaning of the verb.

Non <i>ci</i> sento niente	I hear nothing
<i>Ci</i> ho due mila lire	I have two thousand lire (in the house, on my person)
Iddio <i>c'è</i>	God is

c. 'Here is,' 'there is,' when demonstrative, are translated by *ecco* (cf. 100, a); when not demonstrative, by *c'è, ci sono, v'è, vi sono*. *Ecco* answers 'where?' *c'è* etc., 'what?'

<i>Ecco</i> una farfalla!	There is a butterfly
<i>Ci sono</i> tanti olivi sulle colline	There are many olive-trees on the hillsides

d. ~~Altrove~~, *altrove*, are adverbs of place meaning 'elsewhere.'

e. *Dove* and *quando* are used correlatively: *dove . . . dove* meaning 'here . . . there,' and *quando . . . quando* 'now . . . now.'

218. Adverbs of Quantity. a. Cf. 160.

b. Troppo is followed by **da** (or **per**) to mean 'too much . . . to.'

È troppo buono da farlo He is too kind to do it

1. **Troppo** followed by **più** has the meaning of **molto**.

È troppo più difficile che non crede It is much more difficult than you think

c. 'The more . . . the more' is translated by **più . . . e più**.

Più vò inpanzi cogli anni e più amo i giòvani The older I grow the more I love the young

219. Lists of Adverbs and Adverbial Phrases. (Cf. 227.)

a. Adverbs of Manner.

Adagio	With ease, slowly, softly
Ad alta voce	Aloud
All' aperto, al fresco	In the open
A bell' agio	At ease, conveniently, comfortably
A braccetto	Arm in arm
Alla buona	In a familiar way, after a fashion
Alla carlona	Carelessly
A suo comodo	At one's convenience
Alla deriva	Adrift, to leeward
Affatto	Entirely, at all (<i>usually negative</i>)
A galla	Afloat
A gara	In competition
All' improvviso	Unexpectedly
Alla lunga	Long drawn out
A lutto	In mourning
Alla macchia	In secret
A malincuore	Against one's will
Alla meglio	For the best, as best one can
Alla peggio	The worst possible, very badly
Al possibile	The most possible
A quattr'occhi	Tête-à-tête
Alla rinfusa	Helter-skelter; abundantly
A rovescio	Upside down, wrong end to

Ala sfuggita	On the fly, at a glance
Al solito, come al solito	As usual
A soquadro	Topsy-turvy
Alla stracca	Listlessly, unwillingly
Alla svelta	Cursorily, hastily
Alla svogliata	Heedlessly, indifferently
All' ultimo	At last
A un tratto	Suddenly, at once
A vicenda	In turn; mutually
Da capo	Over again
Da senno	In earnest
Di nascosto	Secretly
Di nuovo	Again
Del resto	For the rest, in other respects
Di solito	As a rule
Del tutto	Altogether
Forse	Perhaps
In complesso	Everything considered
Indarno	In vain
Infatti	In fact
In fine	In short
In fretta	In haste
In ogni caso	Anyway, in any case
In pubblico	In public
In tanto	After all, meanwhile
In vano	In vain
Piano	Softly, gently, slowly
Per altro	In other respects, for that matter
Per dispetto	For spite
Senz' altro	Without delay; purely and simply
Senza dubbio	Without doubt
Si e no	Approximately
Sotto sopra	Upside down, helter-skelter
Sul serio	Seriously, in good earnest
Suo malgrado	In spite of him
Bocconi	Flat on one's face
Carponi	On all fours
Ciondoloni	Dangling

In ginocchioni	On one's knees
Penzoloni	Hanging
Ruzzoloni	Head over heels
Tastoni	Gropingly, feeling one's way

b. Adverbs of Place.

Abbasso	Downstairs, down
Accanto	Next, next door
Al di dentro	Inside
Al di fuori	Outside
(A) dritto	Straight ahead
All' indietro	Backward
All' in giù	Downward
All' in su	Upward
Da ciascuna parte	On each side
Dappertutto	Everywhere
Davanti a	Ahead, in front
Di contro	Opposite
Di faccia }	
Di dentro	Inside
Difilato	Straight ahead without stopping
Diritto	Straight ahead
Di fuori	Outside
Di là	On that side, that way
Di qua	On this side, this way
Di qua e di là	On both sides
Di sopra	Upstairs, above
Di sotto	Below, down
Fin dove?	How far?
Fuori di porta	Outside the walls
Giù	Down, below
In giù	Downward
Innanzi	Ahead
In su	Upward
Intorno	Around
Per ogni dove	Everywhere
Qua e là	Here and there

Su	Up, above, <u>upstairs</u>
Su e giù	Up and down
Su per giù	Roughly, approximately

c. Adverbs of Time.

Ala fine	At last
A giorni <i>in giorni</i>	<u>At times</u>
Al giorno d' oggi	Nowadays
A momenti	In a moment, presently
Appena	No sooner, hardly
A tempo	On time
A volte	At times, sometimes
Da mane a sera	From morning till night
Da oggi in poi	Henceforth, from now on
Da qui innanzi	
D' ora innanzi	
Da qui ad un mese	A month from now
Da un momento all' altro	At any moment
Da un pezzo	For some time past
<i>Dianzi - fa poco di tempo</i>	Before, a little while ago
Di buon' ora	Early, <i>per tempo</i> (p. 230)
Di quando in quando	Now and then
Di rado	Seldom
Di recente	Recently
Delle volte	Sometimes
Fino a quando?	Until when?
Fin dal principio	From the first
Fra breve	In a little while
Fra giorni	In a few days
Fra quanto?	How soon?
In giornata	In the course of the day
In men che non si dice	In no time
In oggi	Nowadays
In principio	At first
In quel mentre, in questo mentre	In the meanwhile
In seguito	Afterwards, in the future
In un batter d' occhio	In a flash
Nel frattempo	Meanwhile

Ogni quanto?

Ogni tanto

Or ora

Per ora

Per tempo

Più qua

Poc' anzi

Prima o poi

Quanto prima

Su due piedi

Sull' ultimo

Talvolta

Tempo fa

Tempo indietro

Una volta ogni tanto

How often?

Every so often

Just now

For the present

Early

Later

A little while ago

Sooner or later

As soon as possible

Then and there, on the instant

At the last moment

Sometimes

A while ago

Before this, in the past, some time ago

Once every so often

220. The Verb *valere* 'be worth.'PRINCIPAL PARTS: *valere, valendo, valgo, varrò, valsei, valuto or valso*

PRESENT INDICATIVE

valgo valjamo, valghiamo

vagli valēte

vale vālgono

PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE

valga (vaglia) valghiamo (vagliamo)

valga (vaglia) valghiate (vagliate)

valga (vaglia) vālgano (vagliano)

VOCABULARY

il bōia executioner

Ciro Cyrus

la fedeltà fidelity

Francesco Francis

l'ingegno *m.* talent

il marito husband

il mārte martyr

la māschera mask

il mōstro monster

scellerato criminal, wicked

buttare throw away

giurare swear

impiccare hang

intravedere glimpse

salvare save

sbarazzare rid, disembarass

tradire betray

valersi di avail oneself of

abbasso down, downstairs

alla fine at last

all' improvviso suddenly, unexpectedly

a lutto in mourning	di nuovo again, once more
a momenti in a moment	di rado seldom
a quattr'occhi tête-à-tête	di recente recently
a tempo on time, <i>per tempo, early</i>	fin dal principio from the beginning
bocconi flat on one's face	fin dove? how far?
carponi on all fours	ginocchioni on one's knees
da mane a sera from morning till night	infatti in fact
dappertutto everywhere	in ogni caso in any case
di nascosto secretly	quanto prima as soon as possible
	sul serio seriously

EXERCISE

I

CIRO MENOTTI

Ecco un' altra vittima illustre della tirannia straniera, un altro martire, tradito, imprigionato e impiccato da quel ridicolo mostro che fu Francesco IV, duca di Modena. La sua elevata posizione sociale, il suo ingegno, il suo cuore, l'essere marito e padre, nulla gli valse per salvarlo. *Non* conoscendo quanto fosse ambizioso quel Duca scellerato, gli fece intravedere la possibilità, se si fosse messo alla testa del movimento rivoluzionario, di diventar lui il Re della nuova Italia. E il Duca si mise alla testa dei rivoluzionari modenesi e giurò fedeltà. Ma questo forse egli fece per conoscer meglio gli uomini dei quali avrebbe dovuto sbarazzarsi. Infatti, colto il momento opportuno, buttò via la maschera, li fece tutti arrestare, e nel medesimo tempo scrisse al Governatore austriaco di Reggio: *Mandatemi il boia.*

II

Il duca Francesco si rivoltò della maschera di fedeltà per
 1. Duke Francis availed himself of the mask of fidelity, in order to rid himself of the revolutionists. 2. The wicked man sought secretly, from morning till night, to rid himself of them. 3. At last, suddenly, he had them taken, and had the executioner come.

as soon as possible. 4. He had the martyrs of Italian independence hanged, and many Italian women dressed once more in mourning. 5. After the battle the soldiers were found not seldom on their knees, on all fours, or flat on their faces. 6. One easily sees that you have studied seriously. 7. Was Duke Francis of Modena born in 1779? Yes. 8. Here it is said that Prince Louis is a monster; what do they say of him up there where you are? 9. How far shall we follow this road before turning to the left? 10. In any case we must start early, because it has rained recently. 11. Are you too tired to accompany me? On the contrary, I should like to go. 12. Ciro Menotti died a martyr. Yes. 13. Do you like Mrs. C.? Not at all. She is not at all congenial. 14. Shall we take a walk in the public gardens? By all means!

LESSON XXXVII

PREPOSITIONS

221. The Simple Prepositions. *a.* The simple prepositions *a, con, da, di, in,* and *per* should as a rule be repeated before every noun or pronoun which they govern.

Ne ha dato <i>a</i> Giovanni e <i>a</i> Luigi	He gave some to John and Louis
Parlarono <i>di</i> te e <i>di</i> me	They spoke of you and me

b. The prepositions *contro, dentro, dopo, oltre, presso, senza, sopra, sotto, su, verso,* and sometimes *fra*, take *di* before a personal pronoun.

Non parta <i>senza di</i> me	Do not leave without me
Arrivai <i>dopo di</i> lui	I arrived after him

222. Compound Prepositions. The great majority of Italian prepositions are compound, being composed usually of an

adverb and a preposition, but sometimes of two prepositions together: fuori di 'outside,' intorno a 'around.'

Su per le vie

Up and down the streets

Al di dentro

Inside

a. The prepositions compounded with **a**, when governing a pronoun, drop **a**; the pronoun (cf. 136, **a**) becomes conjunctive in the dative case.

Mi vidi **innanzi** una sentinella (*not*
vidi innanzi **a me**)

I saw **in front of me** a sentinel

Gli andai **incontro** (*not* incontro
a lui)

I went to **meet him**

Due battaglioni **gli** vengono **sopra**
Cadēvagli poco **discosto** Torquato
Ci fa segno di andargli **dietro**

Two battalions came **upon him**
Torquato fell not **far from him**
He makes a sign to us to **follow him**

b. **Lungi**, **lontano**, **discosto**, meaning 'far,' which usually are compounded with **da**, take **di** before an adverb.

Lungi **di** qui

Far from here

Lontano **di** là

Far from there

But

Lontano **dal** centro

Far from the center

223. The Preposition with Adjectives. **a.** Many adjectives take **di** before a noun of material, characteristic, etc.

Una catinella piena **d'** acqua

A basin full of water

I monti neri **di** pini

The mountains black **with** pines

Il sentiero ingombro **di** sassi

The path cumbered **with** stones

Others, which would not take 'of' in English, are

abbondante (**di**) abundant (in)

povero (**di**) poor (in)

ammalato (**di**) ill (with)

ricco (**di**) rich (in)

contento } (**di**) contented (with)

soddisfatto (**di**) satisfied (with)

pago

vestito (**di**) clothed (in)

Non è buona persona perché è così facile per lui. He is good to me. It is not good for me.

§§ 223-225

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

10210

11111 **b.** Many, such as *fedele* 'loyal,' *pericoloso* 'dangerous,' *pronto* 'ready,' *simile* 'similar,' *utile* 'useful,' take **a**, as their English equivalents 'to.'

c. A few, such as *alleno* 'foreign,' 'averse (to),' *diverso* 'different (from),' *indipendente* 'independent (of),' take **da**.

224. The Preposition with Verbs. **a.** For the use of prepositions before infinitives, cf. 174.

b. Many verbs which in English are transitive, in Italian require a preposition before their object, and the reverse is equally true. Those verbs which take **a** take the conjunctive in the dative; when the object is a thing, the pronoun is **ci**. **Ne** is used as the pronoun object of the verbs that take **di**.

Ubbidisce **al** padre

She obeys her father

Il principe successe **al** re

The prince succeeded the king

Giocare **alla** pallacorda

To play tennis

Se **ne** accorse subito

He perceived it immediately

Ci devo rinunciare

I must give it up

Cambierà **d'** opinione

He will change his mind

Domandi **a** Margherita

Ask Margaret

Lo cerco

I am looking for it

La guardano

They are looking at her

Ascoltano la musica

They are listening to the music

Non lo ammette

It does not admit of it

Ho sognato **te**

I dreamed of you

222 **1.** Sometimes the preposition is merely different.

Domandano **di** Lei

They are asking for you

Pensare **a** una cosa

To think of a thing

Ci penso

I am thinking of it

Ridere **di** una cosa

To laugh at a thing

Ne ridavano tanto

They laughed at it a great deal

225. Compound Nouns. English compound nouns are usually translated by means of a prepositional phrase.

a. If the modifying member of the compound be merely descriptive, the preposition is *di*, sometimes *a*.

biglietto <i>di</i> visita	visiting-card
galleria <i>di</i> quadri	picture-gallery
libro <i>di</i> scuola	schoolbook
libro <i>di</i> testo	textbook
a prova <i>di</i> bomba	bomb-proof
orologio <i>a</i> sveglia	alarm clock
schicco <i>a</i> due canne	double-barreled gun

b. If it indicates means, the preposition is *a*.

barca <i>a</i> vela	sailboat
macchina <i>a</i> vapore	steam-engine

c. If it indicates purpose, the preposition is *da*.

cani <i>da</i> caccia	hunting-dogs
tazza <i>da</i> caffè. (But 'tazza <i>di</i> caffè' is 'cup of coffee')	coffee-cup
macchina <i>da</i> cucire	sewing-machine
carta <i>da</i> lettere	letter-paper
servizio <i>da</i> tè	tea-service

d. For the formation and pluralizing of Italian compound nouns, cf. 181.

226. List of Prepositions. *a.* English-Italian.

about, approximately	<i>circa, presso a poco</i>
about, around	<i>intorno a, dintorno a, attorno a, per</i>
about, concerning	<i>di</i>
above	<i>sopra</i>
according to	<i>secondo</i>
across	<i>a traverso</i>
after	<i>dopo; before an infinitive dopo di</i>
against	<i>contra, contro</i>
along	<i>lungo</i>
among	<i>fra, tra</i>
as far as	<i>fino a, sino a</i>

as for per, in quanto a

as to in riguardo a, in rispetto a

at a

at the rate of a ragione di

because of a causa di, a motivo di, per motivo di, a ragione di

before, in front of davanti a, innanzi

before (time) prima di, innanzi

behind dietro

below, beneath sotto

beside, besides, in addition to oltre (a or di)

beside, next to accanto a

between fra, tra

beyond oltre, al di là di, di là da

by (agent) da

by (instrument or means) di

by, beside accanto a

by dint of a forza di

by means of per mezzo di

during durante

except eccetto, fuori di, tranne

for per

for (with measure of time) da

from da

from (used of abstract things, 'from that time,' 'from the beginning')

fin da

in in; after a superlative di or fra

inside of dentro di

instead of invece di

in the midst of in mezzo a

into in

near vicino a, presso a

of di

on su (sur), sopra

on this side of al di qua di

on the other side of al di là di

opposite to dirimpetto a, in faccia a

outside of fuori di

over sopra

through **per**, **attraverso**
 to **a**; *before the name of a country in*; *before that of a person* **da**, **a**
 toward **verso**
 under **sotto**
 until **fino a**, **sino a**
 with **con**
 within, inside of **dentro** (**di** or **a**)
 within, in the course of (*time*) **fra**
 without **senza**
 without, outside of **fuori di**

b. Italian-English.

a, **ad** at, to
a beneficio di for the benefit of
a causa di because of
accanto a } beside, next to
accosto a }
addosso a on, on top of, on the back of
a dispetto di in spite of
ad onore di in honor of
a disonta di in spite of
a favore di in favor of
a forza di by dint of
al di là di beyond
al di qua di on this side of
allato a by the side of
all' infuori di outside of
a malgrado di notwithstanding
appetto a facing, opposite
appiè di at the foot of
a pro di to the advantage of
a ragione di because of; at the rate of
attorno a around, round about
attraverso a across, through
con with
contra, contro (**a** or **di**) against
da by, from
davanti a before, in front of

dentro a (ar di) within, inside of

di of

dietro (a or di) behind

di là da on the other side of

dinanzi a in front of

dintorno a around

di qua da on this side of

dirimpetto a opposite, facing

diacosto a away from

dopo, dopo di after

durante during

eccetto except

entro a within (*time*)

fin da from (*time*)

fino a until, up to

fra between, among ; within (*time*)

fuori di outside of

giusta according to, conformably to

in in, into

in cambio di in exchange for

in capo a (di) at the end of, at the head of

in cima a at the summit of

incontro a against

in faccia a opposite, facing

in fondo a at the end of, at the back of, at the bottom of

in luogo di instead of

in mezzo a in the midst of

innanzi a in front of

in quanto a as to

in riguardo a } with respect to
in rispetto a }

insieme a (con) together with

intorno a around

invece di instead of

lontano da (di) far from

lungi da (di) far from

lungo along

malgrado in spite of

/ <u>mediante</u> by means of	<u>secondo</u> according to
/ <u>mercè</u> <i>gr.</i> thanks to	<u>senza</u> without
/ <u>oltre a</u> beyond	<u>sino a</u> up to
/ <u>per</u> through, for	<u>sopra</u> (a) above
/ <u>per mezzo di</u> by means of	<u>sotto</u> (a) below
/ <u>per motivo di</u> because of	<u>su</u> (sur) on
/ <u>presso a</u> near	<u>tra</u> between, among
/ <u>prima di</u> before (<i>time</i>)	<u>tranne</u> except
/ <u>rasente a</u> close to, grazing	<u>verso</u> towards
/ <u>salvo</u> except	<u>vicino a</u> near

~~/~~ **227. Idiomatic Use of Prepositions.** The correct use of prepositions is one of the most delicate and difficult things in the study of any foreign language. The uses of a given preposition overlap, and it is not easy to determine the limits of each. 'To' and 'from,' for example, may each be translated variously, according to the shade of meaning, by *a*, *di*, or *da*. No rules can be formulated in this matter, practice and observation being the only guides. A careful reading and rereading of the examples assembled below will, however, show which is the preposition to be used in a good many typical cases.

a. Phrases with *a*, meaning 'at,' 'by,' 'from,' 'in,' 'of,' 'on,' 'to,' 'with,' 'within.'

/ <u>A bocca aperta</u>	With open mouth
/ <u>A bordo</u>	On board
/ <u>Al buio</u>	In the dark
/ <u>A capo chino</u>	With bowed head
/ <u>A che cosa pensa?</u>	Of what are you thinking?
/ <u>Al chiaro di luna</u>	By moonlight
/ <u>A contanti</u>	In cash
/ <u>A cottimo</u>	By the piece, piecework
/ <u>A danaro sonante</u>	In cash
/ <u>Alla destra, alla sinistra</u>	To the right, to the left
/ <u>A due per due</u>	Two by two

A due per volta	Two at a time
A giornata	By the day
Alla giornata, vivere	To live from day to day, from hand to mouth
All' ingrosso	At wholesale
A macchina	By machine
A mano	By hand
Al mare	By the sea
A mente	By heart
A migliaia	By thousands
A minuto	At retail
A modo suo	In one's own way
A nolo, prendere <i>or</i> dare	To rent <i>or</i> let
A olio	In oils
A ora	By the hour
A orecchio	By ear
Alla pioggia	In the rain
A portata di mano	Within reach of one's hand
A posta	On purpose
A che pro?	To what end?
Al sole	In the sun
A volo	On the wing
A volta di corriere	By return mail
La morte lo rapiva <i>alla</i> famiglia	Death took him from his family
La riconosco <i>alla</i> voce, <i>al</i> color dei capelli	I recognize her by her voice, by the color of her hair
L'ho sentito dire <i>a</i> degli altri	I have heard it said by others
Ai tempi di cui parlo	At the time of which I am speaking
La minestra sembra buona <i>al</i> - l'odore	The soup seems good by the odor of it

b. Phrases with *da*, meaning 'as,' 'at,' 'at the house of,' 'by,' 'characteristic of,' 'for,' 'from,' 'like,' 'on,' 'such as to,' 'to,' or 'with.'

<i>Da</i> padre	Like a father
<i>Dalla</i> parte nostra	On our side
<i>Lettere da</i> casa	Letters from home

Materiale da costruzione	Construction materials
Vini da pasto	Table wines
Ha una famiglia da mantenere	He has a family to maintain
Vede il bambino dai capelli ricciuti?	Do you see the child with curly hair?
Dimora da nostro cugino	He lives at our cousin's
Passi dalla posta	Stop at the post office
Non vuol essere da meno degli altri	He does not wish to be inferior to others
Si crede da più degli altri	He thinks himself superior to others
La chiesa ha tutto da guadagnare, nulla da perdere	The church has everything to gain and nothing to lose
Non dipende da lui	It does not depend on him
Fa da interprete	He acts as interpreter
Abbiamo sostenuto da soli una dura guerra	We have carried on by ourselves a hard war
Non è da dimenticare	It is not to be forgotten
È organizzato in modo da stimolare le energie individue	It is organized in a manner to stimulate individual efforts
Non sembra cosa da vergognarsi	It does not seem to be a thing to be ashamed of
Lo guardano dall' alto in basso	They look down on him
Va da se	It goes without saying
Non mi sento da tanto	I do not feel equal to so much
Non è da tutti	Not every one is capable of it
Dei francobolli da dieci centesimi	Some ten-centime postage stamps

c. Phrases with **di**, meaning 'at,' 'by,' 'from,' 'in,' 'of,' 'to,' or 'with.'

Di corsa	At a run, on the run
Di giorno, di notte	By day, by night
Di giorno in giorno	From day to day
D' estate	In summer
Di gennaio	In January
Fuori d' uso	Out of date
Più lungo di due metri	Longer by two meters
Prendere di mira	To take aim at
Di seconda mano	At second hand

La strada di Firenze
 Rideva di gioia
 Fu punito di morte
 Che facesti delle forbici?

The road to Florence
 She laughed for joy
 He was punished with death
 What did you do with the scissors?

d. Phrases with *in*, *per*, and *su*.

In capelli

Bare-headed

In casa

At home

In chiesa

To church

In mare

At sea

In punta di piedi

On tiptoe

Andare in Francia

To go to France

Tenere in poco conto

To consider of small importance

Per mare, per terra

By land, by sea

Per la posta

By mail

Per la strada

In the street, on the way

Lo sceglie per amico

He chooses him as a friend

Sui libri, sui giornali

In books, in the newspapers

Tre metri su sei

Three meters by six

Su misura

To order

Due su tre

Two out of three

La camera guarda sul davanti

The room is on the front

1. Notice that 'to' before the name of a person is *da* (or *a*); before that of a country, *in*; and before that of any other place, *a*.

Va da Maria, in Italia, alla posta

He goes to ~~Mary's~~, to Italy, to the post-office

Va a Maria

He goes to ~~Mary~~

2. 'From,' with a word referring to a place, is *di* when the limits of the place are more strictly conceived, otherwise *da*. If the article is present, *da* is required.

Esce di chiesa

He is coming out of church

Vengo da chiesa

I am coming from church

Viene di Firenze

He comes from Florence (from within the very walls)

Viene da Firenze

He comes from Florence, or its vicinity

PREPOSITIONS

§ 227

Morì di fame, **dalla** fame

He died **from** hunger

Viene di Germania *or da* Germania

He comes **from** Germany

But

Viene **dall'** Alta Bretagna

He comes **from** Upper Brittany

(because the modifying word requires the article, and the article requires **da**).

VOCABULARY

l' **ambizione** *f.* ambition

Aristotile Aristotle

il **duomo** cathedral

la **gondola** gondola

il **lago** lake

l' **operaio** *m.* workman

la **parte** side, share

il **piattino da tazza** saucer

il **remo** oar *ba- ca- ce- rem- no*

la **sarta** dressmaker

la **scala a chiocciola** winding stair

la **scala a piuoli** ladder

lo **spedale** hospital

il **tè** tea

l' **unità** *f.* union, unity

adriatico Adriatic

drammatico dramatic

fino fine

occidentale western, west

pieno full

cadere, cadrò, caddi, caduto fall

ridere, risi, riso laugh

salire, salgo (salghiamo), salii or

salsi, salite climb, go up

addosso a on the back of, on the top of

dentro di within, inside of

dietro a behind

di là da beyond, on the other side of

dinanzi a before, in front of

di qua da on this side of

disposto away from

fin da from (time)

fino a up to, until

in faccia a opposite

in fondo a at the back of, at the bottom of, at the end of

in mezzo a in the middle of

lontano da far from

a capo chino with bowed head

a contanti in cash

a cottimo by the piece

a giornata by the day

a mano by hand

al mare by the sea

di seconda mano at second hand

in mare at sea

indarno in vain

EXERCISE

I

1. Bring me a teacup, child, and two saucers.
2. They both work: she has a sewing-machine and works at home, and he works by the day at the baker's.
3. The Spaniard was coming behind us, with his head bowed.
4. See how fine this lace is! It is made by hand.
5. They are all against me.
6. Where is the cathedral? We were near it just now. Now we are two miles away from it.
7. Are we far from the walls? No, the walls are not far from here.
8. They will not be able to do without us.
9. At first the Italians dreamed in vain of independence and unity.
10. You will arrive after us.
11. His theme was the dramatic unities of Aristotle.
12. Winding stairs are easier to climb than ladders.
13. Here there is nothing to sell.
14. Sailboats, steamboats and rowboats were following the gondolas.
15. Who are the gentleman with the white hair and the lady with the blue eyes?
16. The soldiers were falling on top of us.
17. On which side of the lake do you live?
18. We live on the other side of the lake.
19. I prefer to live on this side of it.
20. Are you acquainted with the hospital for children? Our house is opposite it.
21. How long shall you stay? From the first of April to the eleventh of May.
22. The dress-maker is in the middle of the city, at the end of Via Roma.
23. By dint of money one can do much.

II

1. They live outside the walls. I thought they lived inside.
2. As we were coming out of church, they passed us, coming from home.
3. We spent two months by the sea, near one of the Adriatic ports.
4. That is a thing to remember.
5. We were not able to have the criminal imprisoned.
6. I bought these books at second hand; I shall pay for them to-morrow in cash.
7. Wait for us inside the church.
8. Children obey their parents.
9. Come

Vengano a noi, tutti quanti, alle cinque meno venti 10. Dite queste parole terribili ^{terribili} a lei e me. 11. Non guardi questi quadri. Salvo brutti. 12. Cambierà d'opinione e non siierà alla loro ambizione. PREPOSITIONS
Trovece di mandarlo a desso, ce lo porterà quando v. § 227 a tir

to our house, all of you, at twenty minutes before five. 10. He spoke these terrible words before her and me. 11. Do not look at these pictures; they are ugly. 12. He will change his mind and renounce his ambitions. 13. Instead of sending it to us now, he will bring it to us when he comes to Florence. 14. Those workmen are working by the piece. 15. Look for us outside the cathedral, on the west side. 16. The lakes are full of water at this season. 17. The prisoner stood before him. 18. You cannot do without it. 19. They were laughing at us. 20. We were two weeks at sea. 21. I have received by mail some letters from home. 22. Some ladies are here who are asking for you. 23. You cannot give it up. 24. We always spend a month by the sea in summer.

DIALOGO

DALLA MODISTA

- Vuol accompagnarmi dalla modista?
- Volentieri. Dove sta?
- Vicino, a due passi. Nella prima via a destra, numero 20.
- Già vedo il suo cartello: *Sorelle Chiarini. Cappelli da Signore.* Entriamo.
- Buon giorno, Signore. Che cosa mi comandano?
- Io non voglio niente, ma questa signora desidera un cappello da viaggio. Non è pratica di Firenze e le ho detto che Lei la servirà bene.
- Grazie, Signora. Proverò di meritare la Sua raccomandazione.
- Ci faccia vedere dei figurini.
- Siamo a mezza stagione. Lo desidera di paglia o di feltro?
- Di feltro, di forma piccola.
- Le mostrerò prima dei fondini. Eccone uno. Proviamolo.
- Non mi piace. La tesa è troppo larga e il capino troppo tondo. Mi stringe alla fronte, mi darà mal di testa.

— Questo Le starebbe bene, mi pare.

— Mi sta bene, davvero. Solo sarebbe un po' sfacciato per il colore. Per il viaggio ci vuole qualcosa di più modesto.

— Ecco la stessa forma di un colore più scuro.

— Benissimo. E la guarnizione?

— Per guarnizione, Signora, io direi un fiocco di nastro di seta nera, ovvero una piccola fantasia. Con questa forma non sta bene la piuma.

— Preferisco il fiocco. Quando sarà finito?

— Per domani.

— Vabbene. Badi di non mancare, io parto alle sette della mattina seguente.

— Non abbia paura. L'avrà senza fallo. A rivederla, Signora.

LESSON XXXVIII

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES

228. Augmentatives and Diminutives. Terminations modifying the meaning of nouns, adjectives, and verbs are very common in Italian, and with nouns may take the place of the corresponding adjective at the will of the speaker, unless the idea of size is to be emphasized. These terminations are augmentative or diminutive, caressing or disparaging, most diminutives conveying with the idea of small size that of affection or disparagement, or one of the latter alone.

a. The most important augmentatives are *-one*, *-ona*, *-otto*, and *-occhio*.

1. *-One* means 'very large,' and it may be masculine even when added to a feminine noun; but it has a feminine form in adjectives.

AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES § 228

abstract nouns, and those describing persons as to age or family relationship.

Una donna; un donnone (<i>burl.</i>)	A woman; an enormous woman
Un uomo; un omone	A man; a large man
Una strada; uno stradone	A road; a highway
Una figliuola; una figliolona	A little daughter; a tall, or overgrown, little daughter
Una vecchia; una vecchiona	An old woman; a very tall old woman

2. -Otto, -occio, mean 'rather large' with nouns, and with adjectives modify the meaning like 'rather.' With names of animals, -otto is a diminutive meaning the young of the species.

Una casa; un casotto	A house; a somewhat large house
Grasso; grassotto or grassoccio	Fat; plump
La tigre; il tigrotto	The tiger; the tiger's cub

b. The most important diminutives are -ino (-cino, -icino, -olino), meaning diminutiveness, charm, and affection; -etto and -ello (-cello, -erello, -icello), implying compassion or indulgence in addition to the idea of small size; -uccio, -uzzo, -uzzolo, -uolo (-plo), which imply endearment when applied to persons and disparagement when applied to things; and -accio, -astro, and -azzo, which are terms of unqualified dislike and disparagement.

La mano; la manina	The hand; the pretty little hand
La povera; la poverina	The poor woman; the poor dear woman, the poor thing
La casa; la casuccia	The house; the poor little house
La viola; il violino	The viol; the violin
Il figlio; il figliuolo	The son; the young son
Cantare; cantarellare	To sing; to warble
Bello; bellino	Beautiful; pretty
Caro; carino	Dear; charming
Un medico; un medicastro	A doctor; a poor, unskillful doctor

Il cavallo; il cavallaccio	The horse; the bad-tempered, wretched horse
L' asino; l' asinello	The donkey; the small, or young, donkey

229. Rules of Formation. These terminations cannot be used indiscriminately, but must be chosen in accordance with precedent and euphony. The ear is a sufficient guide in this matter to the Italian, but the foreigner must use great discretion and will find it safest to confine himself to forms he has met with.

a. If the normal ending of a word chance to be one of these terminations, then not that one, but some other must be chosen as diminutive or augmentative.

Il ruscello; il ruscelletto	The brook; the small brook
L' uccello; l' uccellino	The bird; the young bird
La cugina; la cuginetta	The cousin; the attractive little cousin

b. If the word end in **-one**, the terminations **-one**, **-ino**, and **-ello** become respectively **-cione**, **-cino**, and **-cello**.

Il bastone; il bastoncione	The stick; the great stick
Il padrone; il padroncino	The master; the young master
Il violone; il violoncello	The bass viol; the violoncello

c. These terminations may be combined.

Un pochino, un pochetino	A little bit
Un figliuolo; un figliolino	A little son; a dear little son

d. The augmentative or diminutive sometimes loses its character of termination, and the modification becomes a permanent new word.

L' acqua; l' acquergello	Water; the water-color
La suora; la sorella	The nun; the sister
Il frate; il fratello	The friar; the brother
Il cavallo; il cavalletto	The horse; the saw-horse or easel

VOCABULARY

il bastone (<i>dim.</i> bastoncello) cane	grasso fat
il cane dog	ignorante ignorant
la facoltà division of university	sapiente wise, sapient
il salotto sitting-room	annoverare enumerate, count
la scala stairs	porgere, porsi, porto hold out
lo scalino step of stair	presumere, presunsi, presunto assume
Tommaso Thomas	oramai now, in view of this
l' università <i>f.</i> university	in salvo in safety

EXERCISE

I

1. In Italia lo studio della medicina dura sei anni; a New York, tre o, al più, quattro. 2. Quali sapientoni di medici devono uscire dalle università americane! 3. Ma in Italia i due primi anni della Facoltà medica sono esclusivamente dedicati allo studio delle scienze naturali. 4. Nelle università americane, invece, si presume che il giovane che vuole entrare in una Facoltà di medicina abbia già di queste materie quelle nozioni che oramai fanno quasi parte della cultura generale. 5. In Italia non trovate una cittaduzza di diecimila abitanti che non abbia l'onore di annoverare entro le sue mura qualche dozzina di avvocantucci e di medicastri. 6. La famiglia reale ha dovuto fuggire, per mettere in salvo i principini. 7. Un grand' artista fiorentino, il quale morì giovane, è conosciuto ai posteri sotto il nome di Masaccio, cioè, Cattivo Tommaso! 8. Non si può confrontare la mia casuccia con quel palazzone! 9. Come sta, amico mio? Benone! 10. I canini giuocano coi gattini. 11. Ho comprato qualche cosuccia per la bambina.

Entrando nella sala d'entrata si trova una scala che conduce al salotto.
 1. As one enters the hall, there is a stairway which leads upstairs to the drawing-room, with a sitting-room next it. 2. The steps of the stairs are rather high. 3. The young man has a cane, and

Suo fra tellino ha un bastoncello *Suo padre è grasso e lei*
 his little brother has a little cane. 4. Her father is fat, and she is
già grassa already plump. 5. We shall take the big dog with us, and leave
icono the puppies at home. 6. Unskillful poets are not to be praised.
Il capitano 7. The little peasant boy carries a great stick. 8. These horrid
libro big books are heavy to carry. 9. She has small hands. 10. My
figliolo little son, you will one day be a big man like me. 11. We live near
cina al portone the great gate. 12. The baby put out its little hands to us. 13. In
 the Italian universities are found many students.

Le università italiane
trovano molti
studenti

DIALOGO

SI FANNO LE COMPRE

— Vuol venire con me fino al centro? Ho tante commissioni da fare.

— Volentieri.

— Strada facendo, ci fermeremo dal gioielliere, dove ho lasciato il mio orologio per farlo riparare. Non va bene. Un giorno va troppo avanti, un altro giorno troppo indietro. Non va mai giusto. In questo momento fa cinque minuti il giorno.

— Anch' io voglio andarci. Devo lasciare il mio *braccio* fermaglio da raccomandare. Non si chiude bene, e la pietra non è incassata a dovere.

— Poi andremo dal *mercato* merciaio, dove ho bisogno di comprare tante cose. Prima vorrei un metro di seta uguale a questo campione. Poi occorre tutta la roba da cucire, per un astuccio da viaggio che voglio preparare per un' amica. Comprerò un paio di forbicini, degli aghi di diverse grossezze, dei rocchetti di cotone e di seta, un ditale, e degli spilli e dei ganci. È tanto comodo viaggiando di poter trovare tutto l' occorrente in caso di bisogno.

— Al ritorno passiamo dal cartolaio, per prendere della carta protocollo della quale mi servo per copiare.

— Io ho bisogno dell' inchiostro per la penna a serbatoio, della carta da lettere, e della cartasuga.

— La carta come la compra? Sciolta o in scatola?

— Sempre sciolta. Non mi piace quella in scatola; ce ne danno meno, e non è sempre di buon gusto. Mi occorre anche un pacchetto di buste assortite colla carta, e non ci sarà altro da fare.

LESSON XXXIX

CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS

230. Conjunctions. The conjunctions, like the prepositions, are frequently compound. The following lists are offered for ready reference in translation. The Italian-English list is much the longer, the English-Italian being confined to the more common conjunctions which the student will find useful. Those which require the subjunctive are indicated.

a. List of Conjunctions, English-Italian.

after *dopo che*
 also *anche, pure*
 although *benchè, sebbene (w. subj.)*
 and *e*
 as, since *poichè, siccome*
 as (*after tanto*) *quanto*; (*after tale*) *quale*; (*after così*) *come*
 as if *come se, quasi, quasi che (w. subj.)*
 as fast as *via via che*
 as long as *tanto che, fintantochè*
 as well as *come ancor*
 because *perchè, perciocchè*
 before *avanti che, prima che (w. subj.)*
 both . . . and *e . . . e*
 but *ma*; but if *che se*
 but rather, but indeed *bensì*
 either . . . or *o . . . o*
 even if *anche se; ancorchè, quando anche (w. subj.)*

- except that *se non che, tranne che* (*w. subj.*)
 for *chè, poichè*
 granting that *dato che, sempre che* (*w. subj.*)
 however, nevertheless *però, pure, tuttavia*
 however (*before adj. or adv.*) *per quanto, quantunque* (*w. subj.*)
 if *se*
 if only *solo che, purchè* (*w. subj.*)
 in case *caso mai, nel caso che* (*w. subj.*) *in case w. subj.*
 in order that *acciocchè, affinché, perchè* (*w. subj.*)
 in spite of the fact that *malgrado che* (*w. subj.*)
 much less *non che* (*w. subj.*)
 neither . . . nor *né . . . nè*
 nevertheless *però, tuttavia, nondimeno, ciò non ostante*
 nor . . . either *nemmeno, neppure*
 nor even *neanche, neppure*
 not to say . . . but even *non che . . . ma*
 notwithstanding that *nonostante che, malgrado che* (*w. subj.*)
 on condition that *a patto che, a condizione che* (*w. subj.*)
 or *o*
 or else *oppure, ossia* (*equivalence*), *ovvero* (*difference*)
 provided that *purchè* (*w. subj.*)
 rather than *piuttosto che*
 since (*causal*) *poichè, siccome, giacchè*
 since (*temporal*) *dacchè*
 so, so then *dunque*
 so that, in order that *perchè, affinché, acciocchè* (*w. subj.*)
 so that (*result*) *di modo che, sicchè*
 supposing that *posto che, supposto che* (*w. subj.*)
 than *che, che non, di quel che* (*cf. 115, b, c, d*)
 that *che*
 that, in order that *perchè* (*w. subj.*)
 that is *cioè*
 the more as, the more that *tanto più che*
 then, accordingly *dunque*
 therefore *perciò, però, dunque, adunque*
 though *see* although
 too *anche, pure*
 unless *senza che, a meno che non* (*w. subj.*)

CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS § 230

until ~~finchè non~~

when ~~quando~~

whence ~~donde~~

where ~~dove, là dove, ove~~

whereas ~~considerando che~~

wherefore ~~[onde (w. subj.)]~~ per lo che

wherever ~~dovunque (w. subj.)~~

whether ~~se, sia, sia che~~

while ~~mentre, mentre che~~

yet ~~nondimeno, tuttavia, però, pure, nulladimeno~~

b. List of Conjunctions, Italian-English.

acciò, acciocchè (w. subj.) so that, in order that

a condizione che (w. subj.) on condition that

adunque then, so then

affinchè (w. subj.) in order that

a mano a mano che proportionately as, as fast as

a meno che non (w. subj.) unless

anche also

anche se even if

ancora yet, still, again

ancorchè (w. subj.) even if, although

anzi che rather that

a patto che (w. subj.) on condition that

avanti che (w. subj.) before, ~~prima~~

avvegna che (w. subj.) although

benchè (w. subj.) although

bensì but rather, nay indeed

caso, caso mai (w. subj.) in case

che that

che, che non than

che for

cioè that is

ciò non ostante notwithstanding

come as, as it were

come anco as well as

come se (w. subj.) as if

conciossiachè although

considerando che whereas
 con questo che (*w. subj.*) notwithstanding that
 così as (*after come*)
 dacché since (*temporal*)
 dato che (*w. subj.*) granting that
 di modo che so that (*result*)
 donde whence
 dopo che after
 dovunque (*w. subj.*) wherever
 dunque then, so then
 e and
 e . . . e both . . . and
 eccetto che (*w. subj.*) unless
 (finché as long as
 finché non until
 fintantoché as long as
 fuorché (*w. subj.*) except that
 giacché since (*causal*)
 in guisa che so as to
 là dove where
 laddove wherefore
 ma but
 malgrado che (*w. subj.*) notwithstanding that
 mentre, mentre che while
 né nor
 né . . . né neither . . . nor
 nel caso che (*w. subj.*) in case
 { nemmeno nor, nor . . . either
 { neppure nor, nor . . . either
 non che (*w. subj.*) much less
 non che . . . ma not to say . . . but even
 nondimeno, non perciò, nulladimeno nevertheless
 non ostante che (*w. subj.*) notwithstanding that
 non solo . . . ma not only . . . but
 o or
 o . . . o either . . . or
 onde (*w. subj.*) wherefore, because of which, so as to
 oppure, ossia, ovvero or else

- perchè because; (*w. subj.*) in order that
 perciò therefore
 perciocchè because
 per lo chè wherefore, because of which
 però however
 perocchè because
 per quanto (*w. subj.*) however (*before adj.*)
 piuttosto chè rather than
 poichè since (*causal*)
 poscia chè after
 posto chè (*w. subj.*) supposing that
 prima chè (*w. subj.*) before
 purchè (*w. subj.*) provided that
 pure however, also
 quale as (*after tale*)
 qualora (*w. subj.*) whenever, as often as
 quando when
 quando anche (*w. subj.*) even if
 quanto as (*after tanto*)
 quantunque (*w. subj.*) whenever
 quasi, quasi chè (*w. subj.*) as if
 se if
 sebbene (*w. subj.*) although
 secondochè according as
 semprechè (*w. subj.*) granting that
 se non chè except that
 senza chè (*w. subj.*) unless
 se pure (*w. subj.*) if only
 sia, sia chè whether
 sicchè so that (*result*)
 siccome as, since
 solo chè (*w. subj.*) if only
 supposto chè (*w. subj.*) supposing that
 tanto chè as long as
 tanto più chè the more that
 tranne chè (*w. subj.*) except that
 tuttavia however, anyway
 via via chè as fast as

1. Certain conjunctions, as **anche** ~~se~~, **di modo che**, etc., which are usually followed by the indicative, are sometimes followed by the subjunctive.

2. Questions and exclamations are introduced sometimes, for greater vivacity, by **o** or **che**, used pleonastically.

Dimmi, Santino, ~~che~~ ti piace più Tell me, Santino, do you like fresh
la frutta fresca o quella secca? fruit better, or dried?

O provatevi anche voi! È tanto Try it yourself! It is very easy
facile

O credete chi ci fosse? Now who do you think was there?

3. A clause is introduced sometimes by **si che**, as a strengthening or contrasting form.

E **si che** di amministrazioni libere And yet Italian statesmen did not
agli uomini di stato italiani non lack for examples of liberal
mancavano esempi!

Se, per esempio, il giovane leggesse un' orazione di Cicerone, If, for example, the youth should
alcune odi di Orazio, un libro read a speech of Cicero, a few
di Virgilio . . . allora **si che** egli odes of Horace, a book of Vir-
avrebbe un' idea, tutt' altro che gil . . . then he would indeed
completa, ma almeno rispettabile, have an idea, far from complete,
della letteratura classica but at least tolerable, of classic
literature

4. The conjunction **che** is often used alone in familiar speech to mean 'so that,' 'such that.'

Cantavano **ch'** era un piacere They sang so that it was a delight
(to listen)

Parlava italiano ~~ch'~~ era un orrore He spoke Italian horribly

231. Interjections. The following are the more frequent interjections in Italian:

a. Expressing joy, admiration, enthusiasm, and the like:

Bene!

Well! Good!

Bravo! Brava!

Well done! Good for him (or her)!

CONJUNCTIONS AND INTERJECTIONS § 231

Oh gioia!	What joy! How delightful!
Viva! Evviva!	Hurrah!
Beato te!	Happy you!

b. Grief, pain, compassion, anger, and the like :

Ahi! Ohi! Deh! Ahimè! Ohimè!	Alas!
Guai!	Woe! Beware!
Peccato! Che peccato!	What a pity! What a shame!
Povero a me!	Poor me
Oh, poverino!	Oh, the poor thing!
Pietà!	Mercy!
Dio ci aiuti!	Heaven help us!
Oibò! Vergogna!	Shame!
Maledetto! Diavolo!	Zounds! The deuce!

Ces. Dio

c. Surprise :

Diāmine! Per bacco!	Is it possible! Of course!
Oh bella! Curioso!	How strange!
Mah! Ma chē!	But —! How absurd!
Come mai!	How in the world? How can it possibly be?

d. Encouragement :

Pazienza!	Have patience! Resignation!
Speriamo!	Let us hope so!
Coraggio! Animo!	Courage!
Orsù!	Come now!
Su!	Here! Come!

e. Miscellaneous :

Ecco!	There! Exactly!
Via!	Come, come! Oh, come now!
Ben venuto! Ben venuta!	Welcome!
Largo!	Make way!
Magari!	Rather! Would to God!
Zitto!	Hush!
Chi lo sa!	Who knows!
Piano!	Softly! Gently!

257

12230

Basta!
 Al ladro!
 All' armi!
 Abbasso la tirānnide!
 Viva l' Italia!

Enough!
 Stop thief!
 To arms!
 Down with tyranny!
 Long live Italy!

VOCABULARY

l' ālbero *m.* tree, mast
 la breccia breach
 la cima summit
 la ferita wound
 la finzione pretense
 Livorno Leghorn
 il marinaio sailor
 la pōlvre powder
 il rischio risk
 il sepolcreto cemetery
 il sogno dream
 lo strapazzo abuse, neglect
 avverare fulfill
 deplorare regret
 gridare shout
 redimere, redēnsi, redēnto redeem
 saltare in aria be blown up

a mēno chē unless
 a patto chē on condition that
 a vicēda in turn; mutually
 caso mai in case
 dacchē since (*time*)
 in cima a on the top of
 malgrado chē notwithstanding that
 neppure not even
 nondimēno nevertheless
 piuttosto chē rather than
 poichē since (*cause*)
 prima chē before
 purchē provided that
 siccome as
 tranne chē except that
 irredēnto unredeemed

EXERCISE

I

ULTIMI ANNI DELLA GUERRA

Nel 1866, alla battaglia navale di Lissa, Alfrēdo Cappellini livornese, un erce da paragonarsi ai più grandi dell' antichità, piuttosto che veder cadere nelle mani dei nemici la sua nave, 'Palestro', dette fuoco alle polveri e saltò in aria con tutti i suoi marinai, i quali morirono gridando dalle cime degli alberi: *Viva l' Italia!*

A Villa Gloria cade Enrico Cairoli, e vi resta malamente ferito Giovanni Cairoli, il quale morì poi, nel 1869. Nomi di una famiglia

sacra alla patria, di una famiglia che per questa patria dette la
 ✓ vita di quattro sopra cinque che erano i suoi figli generosi. Ernesto muore combattendo a Varese; Luigi muore a Napoli per gli strapazzi della guerra del 1860; Benedetto solo, carico di ferite, sopravvive dopo tanti rischi a conforto della madre. Onore alla memoria di Adelaide Cairoli, di questa fortissima donna, che dorme ora nel sepolcreto di Groppello, in mezzo a quei figli, che, educati da lei, seppero dare tanta gloria al loro nome e all' Italia.

Oggi, ~~al~~ fine, dopo tante fatiche, tanti sacrifici, e tanti martiri, eccoci arrivati alla nostra capitale, ecco finalmente avverato il sogno di tanti secoli! Ci saremmo dovuti entrare senza le armi, ma le armi ci vollero. Il 20 settembre, 1870, i cannoni dell' esercito italiano tonavano dinanzi alle mura di Porta Pia. Breve fu la finzione di resistenza da parte dei soldati che la difendevano, e una larga breccia aprì il passo nella città eterna al trionfo dell' Italia redenta.

Viva Roma capitale d' Italia! Ci siamo e ci resteremo!

Immagina in come agli altri aspettando la morte

1. The sailors, on top of the masts, were awaiting death.
2. Alfred Cappellini of Leghorn preferred to set fire to the powder and be blown up, rather than let his ship be taken.
3. Since I have been in Italy, the great war has begun.
4. Since they are to arrive soon, let us not go away before they come.
5. Of the sailors of the ship 'Palestro' not one was left [remained] alive.
6. They were all blown up.
7. Benedetto Cairoli saw his four brothers die in the war.
8. Only he survived them.
9. Unless many men know how to die for their country, Italy can never be united.
10. The Italian soldiers may say: Italy's dream of so many centuries could not have been fulfilled without us.
11. Nevertheless, it is to be regretted that arms were necessary.
12. Enrico was glad to die fighting, provided that Italy might be free and united.
13. The soldiers opened several breaches in the walls of the city.
14. Few

§ 231. AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

266 *Peche* *the* *supra* *the* *Roma* *8 sep. a. m. 1841*
 cities have survived longer than [more than] Rome. 15. She has
 survived in spite of governments having been changed and wars
 having been fought [in spite of (the fact) that, notwithstanding
 that, governments have been, etc.]. 16. Italian soldiers and sailors
 were glad to fight to capture Rome, on condition that their sons
 should know how to defend it. 17. For many years this country
 which you see was called by the Italians "Unredeemed Italy."
 18. Here we are arrived in that part of Italy of which we have so
 often thought. 19. The physicians ought to have visited the sol-
 diers in the hospital before their wounds became so dangerous.
 20. Although they were covered with wounds, the soldiers opened
 the way into the Eternal City, crying, "Long live Italy!"

ALPHABETICAL LIST OF IRREGULAR AND DEFECTIVE VERBS (CF. 96, 120, 130)

accēdere, <i>light, kindle</i>	acceſi	acceſo
acclūdere, <i>inclose</i>	accluſi	accluſo
accōrgersi, <i>be aware</i>	mi accorſi	accōrtosi
addurre, <i>produce, convey</i>	adduco, adducendo	addotto
	adduſſi, addurrò	
affliggere, <i>afflict</i>	affliſſi	afflitto
ālgere, <i>be cold</i>	alſi	<i>Defective. Rare</i>
allūdere, <i>allude</i>	alluſi	alluſo
andare, <i>go</i>	<i>Ind. pres. vq or vado, vai, va, andiamo, andate, vanno. Fut. anderò, andrò. Past fut. anderèi or andrèi. Subj. vada etc., andiamo, andiate, vādano. Imp. va', andate</i>	
annētere, <i>combine</i>	<i>Past abs. annettei or annēſſi, annettè or annēſſe, etc. Past part. annēſſo</i>	
apparire, <i>appear</i>	<i>Ind. pres. apparisco or appaio, apparisci or appari, apparisce or appare; (appariamo), apparite, appariscono or appaiono. Past abs. apparii, apparvi, apparſi, etc. Subj. apparisca or appaia. Past part. apparito or apparſo</i>	
appartenere, <i>belong</i>	<i>See tenere</i>	
appēdere, <i>hang</i>	appeſi	appeſo
applaudire (applaudere, <i>poetical</i>), <i>applaud</i>	applaudo, applaudisco	
aprire, <i>open</i>	<i>Pres. ind. apro. Past abs. apersi or aprii. Past part. aperto</i>	
ārdere, <i>burn</i>	arſi	arſo
ardire, <i>be bold</i>	<i>Defective in parts which are identical with ardere</i>	
arrēdere, <i>comply</i>	<i>See rendere</i>	
arrōgere, <i>add</i>	arroſi	arroſo or arroto. <i>Defective. Rare</i>
ascōdere, <i>hide</i>	<i>See nascondere</i>	
aspērgere, <i>scatter, sprinkle</i>	asperiſi	asperiſo

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

assalire, <i>assail</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> assalgo or assalisco, assali or assalisci, etc., assaliamo or assalghiamo, assalite, assalgono or assaliscono, etc. <i>Past abs.</i> assalii or assalsi. <i>Subj.</i> assalga or assalisca. <i>Past part.</i> assalito	
assidersi, <i>besiege</i>	mi assisi	assiso
assistere, <i>assist</i>		assistito
assolvere, <i>absolve</i>	assolvei, assolvetti or assolsi, assoluto or assolto	
assorbire, <i>absorb</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> assorbisco or assorbo etc. <i>Subj.</i> assorbisca or assorba etc. <i>Past part.</i> assorbito or assorto	
assumere, <i>assume</i>	assunsi	assunto
avere, <i>have</i>	See 120	
avvertire, <i>warn</i>	avverti, avvertisco, etc.	
benedire, <i>bless</i>	<i>Past descr.</i> benedicevo or benedivo etc. <i>Past abs.</i> benedissi or benedii. <i>Imp.</i> benedici etc. <i>Past part.</i> benedetto	
bèvere or bere, <i>drink</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> bevo or beo, bevi or bei, beve or bee, bevono or beono. <i>Past abs.</i> bevvi or bevetti. <i>Fut.</i> beverò or berro	
bollire, <i>boil</i>	<i>Pres. ind.</i> bollo etc.	
cadere, <i>fall</i>	caddi, cadyto	<i>Fut.</i> cadrò
calare, <i>matter</i>	3 ^{sg.} (mi) cale, poet. caglia, poet. calse, poet. caluto. <i>Defective. Impersonal</i>	
capire, <i>be contained in</i>	3 pers. cape, cāpono	
cēdere, <i>yield</i>	cēssi (poet.)	<i>Regular in prose</i>
chiedere, <i>ask</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> 1 sg. chiedo or chieggo, 3 pl. chiedono, chieggono. <i>Past abs.</i> chiesi. <i>Subj.</i> chieda or chiedga, chiediamo, chiedano or chieggano. <i>Past part.</i> chiesto	
chiudere, <i>close</i>	chiusi	chiuso
cingere, <i>gird</i>	cinsi	cinto
circoncidere	See decidere	
cogliere or cōrre, <i>pluck</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> colgo, cogli, coglie, cogliamo or colghiamo, cogliete, colgono. <i>Past abs.</i> colsi. <i>Fut.</i> coglierò or corro. <i>Imp.</i> cogli. <i>Subj.</i> colga etc., cogliamo or colghiamo, colgano. <i>Past part.</i> colto	
cōlere, <i>revere</i>		colto or culto. <i>Rare</i>
comparire, <i>appear</i>	See apparire	

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

compire or cōmpiere, fulfill	<i>Ind. pres.</i> compisco or cōmpio, compisci or cōmpi, etc. <i>Imp.</i> compisci or cōmpi. <i>Subj.</i> compisca or cōmpia etc.; <i>past</i> compissi or compiessi etc. <i>Pres. part.</i> cōmpiendo; <i>past</i> cōmpito or cōmpiuto	
comprimere, compress	compreſsi	compreſso
concedere, concede	concedeſi, concedetti or concessi, conceduto or concesso	
concepire, conceive	(concepe, concepa, conceputo, poetic forms)	
concludere, conclude	<i>See</i> accludere	
condurre, conduct	<i>See</i> addurre	
connettere, connect	<i>See</i> annettere	
conoscere, be acquainted	conobbi	conosciuto
conquidere, conquer	conquisi	conquisto Rare
consistere, consist	<i>See</i> assistere	
consumare, consume, finish	<i>Past abs.</i> consumai or consumsi etc. <i>Past part.</i> con- sumato or consupto	
contessere, entwine	<i>Past part.</i> contesto	
contundere, bruise	contuſi	contuſo
convertire, convert	<i>Ind. pres.</i> converto or convertisco. <i>Past abs.</i> con- vertii or conversi. <i>Past part.</i> convertito, converso	
coprire, cover	copersi	coperto
correggere, correct	<i>See</i> reggere	
correre, run	corſi	corſo. <i>Like</i> correre are
	accorrere, decorrere, percorrere, etc.	
cospargere, sprinkle	<i>See</i> aspergere	
costringere, compel	<i>See</i> stringere	
costruire, construct	costruii or costrussi	costruito or costruito
creſcere, grow	crebbi	cresciuto
cucire, sew	<i>Ind. pres.</i> cucio, cuciono. <i>Subj.</i> cucia etc.	
cuocere, cōcere, cook	<i>Ind. pres.</i> cuocio or cuoco, cuoci, cuoce, cociamo, cocete, cuociono. <i>P. abs.</i> cossi. <i>Fut.</i> cocerò. <i>Imp.</i> cuoci. <i>Subj.</i> cuocia or cuoca. <i>P. part.</i> cotto	
dare, give	<i>Ind. pres.</i> do, dai, dà, diamo, date, danno. <i>Past</i> <i>descr.</i> davo, davi, etc. <i>Past abs.</i> detti or dieſi, deſti, deſte or dieſe, demmo, deſte, deſtero or dieſero. <i>Fut.</i> darò. <i>Imp.</i> da', date. <i>Pres. subj.</i> dia etc.; diamo, diate, diano; <i>past</i> deſſi. <i>Pres.</i> <i>part.</i> dando; <i>past</i> dato	
decidere, decide	deciſi	deciſo

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

deludere, <i>delude</i>	See alludere	
deprimere, <i>depress</i>	See comprimere	
desumere, <i>infer</i>	See assumere	
difendere, <i>defend</i>	difesi	difeso
dipendere, <i>depend</i>	dipesi	dipeso
dipingere, <i>paint</i>	dipinsi	dipinto
dire, (dicere), <i>say</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> dico, dici <i>or</i> di', dice, diciamo, dite, dicono. <i>Past descr.</i> dicevo <i>etc.</i> <i>Past abs.</i> dissi. <i>Fut.</i> dirò. <i>Imp.</i> di', dite. <i>Subj. pres.</i> dica <i>etc.</i> ; <i>past</i> dicessi <i>etc.</i> <i>Part. pres.</i> dicendo, dicente; <i>past detto.</i> <u>Compounds of dire have dici in 2 sg. imp.</u>	
dirigere, <i>direct</i>	diressi	diritto
discorrere, <i>converse</i>	See correre	
discutere, <i>discuss</i>	discussi	discusso
dissolvere, <i>dissolve</i>	dissolvi <i>or</i> dissolvi	dissoluto
dissuadere, <i>dissuade</i>	See persuadere	
distinguere, <i>distinguish</i>	distinsi	distinto
divertire, <i>divert</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> diverto <i>etc.</i> ; "turn aside," regular	
dividere, <i>divide</i>	divisi	diviso
dolere, <i>grieve, pain</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> dolgo, duoli, duole, dolghiamo <i>or</i> doliamo, dolete, dolgono. <i>Past abs.</i> dolsi. <i>Fut.</i> dorro. <i>Subj.</i> dolga. <i>Past part.</i> doluto	
dormire, <i>sleep</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> dormo. <i>Subj.</i> dorma. <i>Imp.</i> dormi. <i>Part. pres.</i> dormente <i>or</i> dormiente	
dovere, <i>owe</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> devo <i>or</i> debbo (<i>poet.</i> deggio); devi <i>or</i> dei; deve, debbe (<i>rare</i>), <i>or</i> dee; dobbiamo; dovete; devono <i>or</i> debbono (<i>poet.</i> deggiono), <i>etc.</i> <i>Fut.</i> dovrò. <i>Subj.</i> deya <i>or</i> debba	
elidere, <i>elide</i>	elişi <i>or</i> elidei	elişo
eludere, <i>elude</i>	See alludere	
emergere, <i>emerge</i>	emersi	emerso
empire <i>or</i> empiere, <i>fill</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> empio, empi, <i>etc.</i> <i>Past abs.</i> empii, empij, empietti; empisti, empiesti, <i>etc.</i> <i>Fut.</i> empirò. <i>Imp.</i> empi, empite. <i>Subj.</i> empia <i>etc.</i> ; <i>past</i> empissi, empiessi, <i>etc.</i> <i>Part. pres.</i> empiendo; <i>past</i> empito <i>or</i> empuito.	
erigere, <i>erect</i>	ersi	(<i>adj.</i> erto). <i>Rare in prose</i>
erigere, <i>erect</i>	See dirigere	

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

escludere, <i>exclude</i>	See accludere	
eşigere, <i>exact</i>	eşigei	eşatto
eşimere, <i>exempt</i>	eşimeî	(<i>Past abs. and past part. from eşentare.</i>)
eşistere, <i>exist</i>	See assistere	
espëllere, <i>expel</i>	espulsi	espulso
esplödere, <i>explode</i>	esplöşi	esplöşo
esprimere, <i>express</i>	See comprimere	
ëssere, <i>be</i>	See 98	
estinguere, <i>extinguish</i>	See distinguere	
evädere, <i>escape</i>	See invadere	
fare, (<i>fäcere</i>), <i>do, make</i>	Ind. pres. fä or faccio, fai, fa (<i>poet. face</i>), facciamo, fate, fanno. <i>Past descr. facevo etc. Past abs. feci. Fut. farò. Imp. fa', fate. Subj. faccia etc. Part. pres. facente, facendo; past fatto</i>	
fedire (<i>defective and poetical for ferire</i>), <i>strike</i>	Ind. pres. fiëdo, fiëdi, fiëde, fiëdono. <i>Subj. fiëda, fiëdano</i>	
fëndere, <i>split</i>	fendej or fëssi	fenduto or fëssio
fërvere, <i>glow</i>	Defective. Lacks compound tenses and past part.	
figgere, <i>fix</i>	fissi	fisso or fitto
finger, <i>pretend</i>	finsi	finto
fiëttere, <i>bend</i>		fïesso. Defective. Poetical
föndere, <i>melt</i>	fuşi	fuşo
frängere, <i>break</i>	fransi	franço
friggere, <i>fry</i>	frissi	fritto
fuggire, <i>flee</i>	Ind. pres. fuggo, fuggi, fuggè, etc. <i>Imp. fuggi. Subj. fugga etc.</i>	
genuflëttere, <i>kneel</i>	genuflëssi	genuflëssio Rare
giacere, <i>lie</i>	Ind. pres. giaccio, giaci, giace, giacciamo or giacciamo, giacete, giäcciono. <i>Past abs. giacqui. Subj. giaccia etc.</i>	
giocare, <i>play</i>	Ind. pres. giuqco, giuqchi, etc. See rotare.	
gire, <i>go</i>	Ind. pres. and Imp. 2 pl. gite. <i>Past descr. givo etc. Past abs. gisti, gimmo, girono. Fut. girò (rare). Past part. gito Defective</i>	
giüngere, <i>arrive</i>	giunsi	giunto
godere, <i>enjoy</i>	Fut. goderò or godrò	
illüdere, <i>illude</i>	See alludere	
immërgere, <i>immerse</i>	See emergere	

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

imprimere, <i>print</i>	See comprimere	
incidere, <i>engrave</i>	incişi	incişo
includere, <i>include</i>	See accludere	
incorrere, <i>incur</i>	See correre	
incūtere, <i>instil</i>	incutei or incussi	incusso
indūlgere, <i>excuse</i>	indulsi	indulto <i>Poetical. Rare</i>
indurre, <i>induce</i>	See addurre	
infocare, <i>inflamm</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> infuoco, infuochi, etc. <i>See</i> rotare.	
inghiottire, <i>swallow</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> inghiottisco or inghiotto. <i>Subj.</i> inghiottisca or inghiotta etc. <i>Imp.</i> inghiottisci or inghiotti	
insistere, <i>insist</i>	See assistere	
intēssere, <i>interweave</i>		intessuto or intesto
infridere, <i>knead</i>	intrişi	intrişo
intrudere, <i>intrude</i>	intruşi	intruşo
invadere, <i>invade</i>	invaşi	invaşo
ire, <i>go</i>	<i>Pres. ind. ite. Past descr. ivi, etc. Past abs. isti, iste, irono. Past part. ito. Poet. Defective</i>	
istruire, <i>instruct</i>	See cōstruire	
lēdere, <i>offend</i>	leşi (<i>rare</i>)	leşo
lēggere, <i>read</i>	leşsi	leşto
licere or lēcere, <i>allow</i>	<i>Past part.</i> lēcito or lícito <i>Impersonal. Defective</i>	
lūcere, <i>shine</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> luci, luçe, lūcono. <i>Past descr.</i> lucevo, lucevano. <i>Subj. pres.</i> luca, lūcano; <i>past</i> luceſsi etc. <i>Pres. part.</i> luceŋdo (<i>adj.</i> luceŋte). <i>Defective</i>	
lūdere, <i>play</i>	luşi	luşo <i>Rare</i>
maledire, <i>curse</i>	See benedire	
mantenere, <i>maintain</i>	See tenere	
mentire, <i>lie, deceive</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> mēnto, mentisco. <i>Subj.</i> mēnta, mentisca. <i>Imp.</i> mēnti etc.	
mērgere, <i>plunge</i>	mērſi	mērso
mēscere, <i>mix</i>		misto or mesciuto
mēttēre, <i>put</i>	mişi or mēſſi	mēſſo
mōlcere, <i>soothe</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> mōlci, mōlce. <i>Past descr.</i> molčevo etc. <i>Imp.</i> mōlci. <i>Subj. past</i> molčeſſi etc. <i>Pres. part.</i> molčeŋdo <i>Defective. Poetical</i>	
mōrdere, <i>bite</i>	mōrſi	mōrso

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

morire, <i>die</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> muōio, muōri, muōre, moriamo, morite, muōiono. <i>Fut.</i> morrò, morirò. <i>Imp.</i> muōri. <i>Subj.</i> muōia, mōra (<i>poet.</i>), moriamo, moriate or moiate, muōiano, mōrano (<i>poet.</i>). <i>Part. pres.</i> morēnte, moriēnte; <i>past</i> mōrto	
mūngere, <i>milk</i>	munsi	munto
muōvere, <i>move</i>	mossi	mōsso
nāscere, <i>be born</i>	nacqui	nato
nascōndere, <i>hide</i>	nascōsi	nascōsto or nascōso
negligere (<i>cf. 5, c</i>), <i>neglect</i>	neglēssi	neglētto
nuōcere, <i>harm</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> nuōco or nōccio, nuōcono or nōcciono, etc. <i>Past abs.</i> nōcqui. <i>Past part.</i> nociuto	
nutrire, <i>nourish</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> nutro, nutrisco. <i>Subj.</i> nutra, nutrisca	
offēdere, <i>offend</i>	offēsi	offēso
offrire or offerire, <i>offer</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> qffro, offerisco. <i>Past abs.</i> offērsi or offrii. <i>Subj.</i> qffra, offerisca. <i>Past part.</i> offērto	
opprimere, <i>oppress</i>	<i>See</i> comprimere	
ottenēre, <i>obtain</i>	<i>See</i> tenere	
parere, <i>appear</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> paio, pari, pare, paiamo, parēte, pāiono. <i>Past abs.</i> paryi or parsi. <i>Fut.</i> parrò. <i>Imp.</i> lacking. <i>Subj.</i> pāia etc., pāiano. <i>Past part.</i> parso or paratō	
partire, <i>leave, go away</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> parto; "share," partisco	
patire, <i>suffer</i>	<i>Rare forms:</i> pato, pati, pate, pātono; <i>p. part.</i> passo.	
pentirsi, <i>repent</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> mi pēnto etc. <i>Imp.</i> pēntiti. <i>Subj.</i> si pēnta etc.	
percipere, <i>perceive</i>	<i>Past part.</i> percētto	<i>Defective. Rare</i>
percuōtere, <i>strike</i>	percōssi	percōsso
	<i>The diphthong is preserved in the ind. pres. wherever the tonic accent falls upon the o.</i>	
pērdere, <i>lose</i>	pērsi, perdēi, or perdētti; pērso or perduto. <i>The compounds disperdere and sperdere have only the irregular forms.</i>	
permēttre, <i>permit</i>	<i>See</i> mettere	
persistere, <i>persist</i>	<i>See</i> assistere	
persuadere, <i>persuade</i>	persuași	persuașo
pervertire, <i>pervert</i>	<i>See</i> avvertire	

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

piacere, <i>please</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> piaccio, piaci, piace, piacciamo, piacete, piacciono. <i>Past abs.</i> piacqui. <i>Subj.</i> piaccia; piacciamo, piacciate, piacciano. <i>Past part.</i> piaciuto	
piāngere, <i>weep</i>	piansi	pianto
pīngere, <i>push</i>	See dipingere	<i>Rare in prose</i>
piq̄vere (<i>impersonal</i>), <i>rain</i>	piovyve	piovuto
plāudere, <i>applaud</i>	See applaudire	<i>Poetical</i>
pq̄rgere, <i>stretch forth</i>	pq̄rsi	pq̄рто
pq̄rre (pōnere), <i>place</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> pongo, poni, pone, poniamo or ponghiamo, ponete, pongono. <i>Past abs.</i> posi. <i>Fut.</i> porrò. <i>Imp.</i> poni. <i>Subj.</i> ponga; poniamo or ponghiamo, poniate, pongano. <i>Part. pres.</i> ponendo; <i>past</i> posto	
possedere, <i>possess</i>	See sedere	
potere, <i>be able</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> posso, puoi, può, possiamo, potete, possono (ponno, <i>poet.</i>). <i>Fut.</i> potrò. <i>Imp.</i> wanting. <i>Subj.</i> possa; possiamo, possiate, possano. <i>Past part.</i> potuto	
precēdere, <i>precede</i>	precessi or precedetti	preceduto
prediligere, <i>prefer</i>	predilessi	prediletto
prelūdere, <i>prelude</i>	See alludere	//
prēmere, <i>crush</i>	pressi, premei, premetti	
prēndere, <i>take</i>	presi	preso
	Comprendere, sorprendere, imprendere, <i>are conjugated like</i> prendere	
presumere, <i>assume</i>	presunsi	presunto
produrre, <i>produce</i>	See addurre	
profferire, <i>proffer</i>	See offerire	
promettere, <i>promise</i>	See mettere	
protēggere, <i>protect</i>	protēssi	protetto
pūngere, <i>prick</i>	punsi	punto
rādere, <i>shave</i>	rasi	raso
recidere, <i>sever</i>	See decidere	
redimere, <i>redeem</i>	redēnsi	redento
redire or riēdere, <i>return</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> riēdo, riēdi, riēde; riēdono. <i>Past descr.</i> redivo. <i>Past abs.</i> redīrono. <i>Subj.</i> (<i>rare</i>) riedesse and riedēssero <i>Defective. Poetical</i>	
rēggere <i>rule</i>	rēssi	rētto
	Compounds conjugated like reggere	

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

rēndere, <i>render</i>	reşi, rendeşi or rendętti; reşo or renduto. Arrēn- dere, arreşo
reprimere, <i>repress</i>	<i>See</i> comprimere
resistere, <i>resist</i>	<i>See</i> assistere
respingere, <i>repulse</i>	<i>See</i> spingere
richiēdere, <i>demand</i>	<i>See</i> chiedere
ridere, <i>laugh</i>	risi
ridurre, <i>reduce</i>	<i>See</i> addurre
rifiēttere, <i>reflect</i>	riflessi <i>In sense of "consider" regular</i>
rifūlgere, <i>shine</i>	rifulsi <i>Part. wanting</i>
rilūcere, <i>shine</i>	rilussi <i>Part. wanting</i>
rimanere, <i>remain</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> rimango, rimani, rimane, rimaniamo or rimanghiamo, rimanete, rimāngono. <i>Past abs.</i> rimasi. <i>Fut.</i> rimarrò. <i>Imp.</i> rimani. <i>Subj.</i> rimanga. <i>Past part.</i> rimasto or rimasto
ripōnere, <i>replace</i>	<i>See</i> porre. <i>More usual form, riporre</i>
risolare, <i>re-sole</i>	risuolo, risuoli, etc.; <i>diphthong occurs wherever o</i> <i>is accented</i>
risolvere, <i>resolve</i>	<i>See</i> assolvere
rispōndere, <i>reply</i>	risposi
riuscire, <i>succeed</i>	<i>See</i> uscire
rōdere, <i>gnaw</i>	rōsi
rōmpere, <i>break</i>	ruppi
rotare, <i>turn, whirl</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> ruoto, ruoti, etc.; <i>diphthong occurs</i> <i>wherever o is accented</i>
salire, <i>go up</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> salgo, sali, sale, salghiamo or sagliamo, salite, sālgono. <i>Past abs.</i> salii or salsi. <i>Imp.</i> sali. <i>Subj.</i> salga, salghiamo, sālgano, etc. <i>Past part.</i> salito
sapere, <i>know</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> sō, sai, sa, sappiamo, sapete, sanno. <i>Past abs.</i> seppi. <i>Imp.</i> sappi, sappiate. <i>Subj.</i> sappia. <i>Fut.</i> saprò. <i>Part. pres.</i> sapiente; <i>past</i> saputo
scēgliere (sceŕre), <i>choose</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> scēlgo, scēgli, scēglie, scegliamo or scelghiamo, scegliete, scēlgono. <i>Past abs.</i> scēlsi. <i>Subj.</i> scēlga etc. <i>Past part.</i> scēlto
scēndere, <i>descend</i>	scēsi
scērnere, <i>discern</i>	scērsi or scerneşi

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

sciñdere, <i>sever</i>	sciãgi	scisso
	Prescindere has prescindetti also	
sciõgliere or sciõrre, loosen	Ind. pres. sciõlgo, sciõgli, sciõglie, sciõgliamo, sciõgliete, sciõlgono. Past abs. sciõlsi. Fut. sciõglierò or sciõrrò. Imp. sciõgli. Subj. sciõlga. Past part. sciõlto	
scolpire, <i>carve</i>	scolpii or poet. sculsi	scolpito or poet. sculto
sconnẽttere, <i>disconnect</i>	See annettere	
scoprire, <i>discover</i>	scopersi	scoperto So coprire
scõrgere, <i>perceive</i>	scõrsi	scõrto
scrivere, <i>write</i>	scrissi	scritto
scuõtere, <i>shake</i>	scõssi	scõsso
	Diphthong uo preserved only where the accent falls on it	
şdrucire, <i>rip</i>	Ind. pres. şdrucio or şdrucisco. Subj. şdrucia or şdrucisca	
sedere, <i>sit</i>	Ind. pres. seggio or siego, sieđi, sieđe, sediamo, sedete, seggono or sieđono. Past abs. sedei. Imp. sieđi. Subj. seggia or sieđa, seggano or sieđano. Past part. seduto	
sedurre, <i>seduce</i>	See addurre	
seguire, <i>follow</i>	Ind. pres. seguio, segui, etc. Subj. segua etc. Imp. segui. Conseguire in sense of "obtain," regular. Eseguire regular	
sentire, <i>feel, smell</i>	Ind. pres. sento, senti, etc. Subj. senta etc. Imp. senti	
seppellire, <i>inter</i>		sepolto or seppellito
servire, <i>serve</i>	Ind. pres. servo, servi. Subj. serva. Imp. servi	
sodisfare, <i>satisfy</i>	Ind. pres. sodisfo or sodisfaccio, sodisfi, sodisfa, sodisfacciamo, sodisfate, sodisfano. Subj. so- disfi or sodisfaccia etc., sodisfacciamo, sodisfac- ciate, sodisfino or sodisfacciano. Imp. sodisfa, sodisfate. See fare	
soffõlcere, <i>support</i>	soffõlse	soffõlto Defective. Rare
soffrire, <i>suffer</i>	See offrire	
solere (defective), <i>be wont</i>	Ind. pres. sogleio, suqli, suqle, sogliamo, solete, sõgliano. Subj. soglia etc. Past abs., fut., past fut., imp., wanting; supplied by <u>esser solito</u> . Past part. sõlito	
sõlvere, <i>undo</i>	solvei (solvetti)	soluto Poetical

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

sonare, <i>ring</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> suqno, suqni. <i>Diphthong occurs wherever the accent falls on o</i>		
sopprimere, <i>suppress</i>	<i>See</i> comprimere		
sorbire, <i>sip</i>	<i>See</i> assorbire		
sōrgere, <i>arise</i>	sōrsi	sorto	
sospēndere, <i>suspend</i>	sospesi, sospeso.	<i>So</i> appendere, impendere; pendere <i>is reg.</i> , dipendere <i>either reg. or irreg.</i>	
sostenere, <i>sustain</i>	<i>See</i> tenere		
spāndere, <i>spill</i>		spanduto <i>or poet.</i>	spanto
spārgere, <i>spatter</i>	sparsi	sparso <i>or rare</i> sparto	
sparire, <i>disappear</i>	<i>See</i> apparire		
spēndere, <i>spend</i>	speşi	speşo	
spēngere <i>or</i> spēgnere, <i>extinguish</i>	spēnsi	spēnto	
spērdere, <i>lose</i>	<i>See</i> perdere		
spērgere, <i>disperse</i>	spērsi	spērsio	<i>Rare</i>
spīngere, <i>push</i>	spinsi	spinto	
spōrgere, <i>project</i>	spōrsi	spōrto	
stare, <i>be, stay</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> stō, stai, sta, stiamo, state, stanno. <i>Past descr.</i> stavo <i>etc.</i> <i>Past abs.</i> stētti, stēsti, stētte <i>or (poet.)</i> stiē, stēmmo, stēste, stēttero. <i>Imp.</i> stā, state. <i>Subj.</i> stia <i>etc.</i> , stiamo, stiate, stiano; <i>past</i> stēssi <i>etc.</i> <i>Past part.</i> stato. <i>Ri-stare and sopra-stare, like stare:</i> ristō, ristai, <i>etc.</i>		
stēndere, <i>extend</i>	<i>See</i> tendere		
strīngere, <i>press</i>	strinsi	strētto	
strūggere, <i>melt</i>	strussi	strutto	
	<i>Distruiggere like</i> struggere		
succēdere, <i>succeed</i>	<i>See</i> concedere		
sūggere, <i>suck</i>	suggei <i>or</i> sussi.	<i>Past part. lacking.</i>	<i>Rare</i>
sussistere, <i>subsist</i>	<i>See</i> assistere		
şvēllere <i>or</i> şvēlgere (<i>şvērre</i>), <i>uproot</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> şvēlgo, şvēlgi <i>or</i> şvēlli, şvēlge <i>or</i> şvēlle; şvēlgiamo <i>or</i> şvēlghiamo, şvēlgete, şvēlgono. <i>Past abs.</i> şvēlsi. <i>Fut.</i> şvēllerō. <i>Subj.</i> şvēlga, şvēlghiamo, şvēlgano. <i>Past part.</i> şvēlto		
şvenire, <i>swoon</i>	<i>See</i> venire. <i>Fut.</i> şvenirō, şverrō		
tacere, <i>be silent</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> taçcio, taci, tace, tacciamo, taçete, taçciono. <i>Past abs.</i> tacqui. <i>Imp.</i> taci. <i>Subj.</i> taçcia; tacciamo, tacciate, taçciano. <i>Past part.</i> taciuto		

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

tēndere, <i>extend</i>	tēsi	tēso	
tenere, <i>hold</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> tēngo, tiēni, tiēne, teniamo <i>or</i> tenghiamo, tenete, tēgono. <i>Past abs.</i> tēnni. <i>Fut.</i> tērrò. <i>Imp.</i> tiēni. <i>Subj.</i> tēnga, teniamo <i>or</i> tenghiamo, <i>etc.</i> <i>Past part.</i> tenuto		
tērgere, <i>wipe</i>	tērsi	tērso	<i>Rare</i>
tingere, <i>tint</i>	tinsi	tinto	
tōgliere <i>or</i> tōrre, <i>take</i> <i>away</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> tōlgo, tōgli, tōglie, togliamo, togliete, tōlgono. <i>Past abs.</i> tōlsi. <i>Fut.</i> torrò <i>or</i> toglierò. <i>Imp.</i> tōgli, tq'. <i>Subj.</i> tōlga <i>etc.</i> <i>Past part.</i> tōlto		
tonare, <i>thunder</i>	<i>Pres.</i> tuono. <i>Diphthong occurs on the accent.</i>		
tōrcere, <i>twist</i>	tōrri	tōrto	
tossire, <i>cough</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> tqssso. <i>Subj.</i> tqssa. <i>Imp.</i> tqssi. (<i>Rarely</i> tossisco <i>etc.</i>)		
tradurre, <i>translate</i>	<i>See addurre</i>		
trarre (trāere), <i>drag</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> traggio, trai, trae, tragghiamo, traete, trāg- gono. <i>Past abs.</i> trassi, traesti, trasse, traemmo, traeste, trāssero. <i>Fut.</i> trarrò. <i>Imp.</i> trai. <i>Subj.</i> tragga <i>etc.</i> , tragghiamo, trāggano. <i>Part. pres.</i> trāendo; <i>past</i> tratto. <i>The compounds</i> attrarre, contrarre, distrarre, ritrarre, <i>etc.</i> , <i>like</i> trarre		
uccidere, <i>kill</i>	uccisi	ucciso	
udire, <i>hear</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> qdo, qdi, qde, udiamo, udite, qdono. <i>Subj.</i> qda; udiāmo, udiāte, qdano. <i>Imp.</i> qdi, udite. <i>Fut.</i> udirò <i>or</i> udrò. <i>Past abs.</i> udiī. <i>Past part.</i> udito		
ūngere, <i>anoint</i>	unsi	unto	
ūrgere, <i>urge</i>	<i>Forms in use: Ind. pres.</i> urge, ūrgono. <i>Past descr.</i> urgēvo, urgēvano. <i>Subj. pres.</i> urga, ūrgano; <i>past</i> urgēsse, urgēssero. <i>Part. pres.</i> urgēte, urgēdo. <i>Fut.</i> urgerà, urgeranno <i>Defective</i>		
uscire (<i>rarely</i> escire), <i>go</i> <i>out</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> esco, esci, esce, usciamo, uscite, ēscono. <i>Subj.</i> ēsca; usciamo, usciate, ēscano. <i>Imp.</i> esci, uscite. <i>Past abs.</i> uscīī. <i>Past part.</i> uscito		
valere, <i>be worth</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> valgo, vali, vale, vagliamo <i>or</i> valghiamo, valēte, vālgono. <i>Past abs.</i> vālsi. <i>Fut.</i> vārrò. <i>Imp.</i> vali. <i>Subj.</i> valga <i>or</i> vaglia, valghiamo <i>or</i> vaglia- mo, valghiate, vālgano <i>or</i> vāgliano. <i>Past part.</i> valso <i>or</i> valuto		

LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS

vedere, <i>see</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> vèdo or veggio, vèdi, vède, vediamo, vedete, vèdono or veggono (<i>poet.</i> veggio, vèg-giono). <i>Past abs.</i> vidi. <i>Fut.</i> vedrò. <i>Imp.</i> vèdi or vè', vedete. <i>Subj.</i> vèda or vègga, <i>poet.</i> vèggia; vediamo, vediate, vèdano or vèggano, <i>poet.</i> vèggiano. <i>Part. pres.</i> vedente or veggente; <i>past visto or veduto.</i> Prevedere and provvedere have futures prevederò and provvederò. Other compounds of vedere, like vedere		
venire, <i>come</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> vengo, vièni, viène, veniamo, venite, vèngono. <i>Past abs.</i> venni. <i>Fut.</i> verrò. <i>Imp.</i> vièni, venite. <i>Subj.</i> vènga, <i>poet.</i> vègna. <i>Part. pres.</i> veniente or vègnente; <i>past</i> venuto. Compounds of venire conjugated like venire		
vestire, <i>dress</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> vèsto, vèsti, vèste, etc. <i>Past part.</i> vestito, <i>poet.</i> vestuto		
vilipèndere, <i>despise</i>	See appendere		
vìncere, <i>conquer</i>	vinsi	vinto	
vìvere, <i>live</i>	<i>Past abs.</i> vissi. <i>Fut.</i> vivrò. <i>Past part.</i> vissuto (<i>rarely</i> vîvuto)		
volere, <i>wish, will</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> vòglio or vò', vuòi, vuòle, vogliamo, vo-lete, vògliono. <i>Past abs.</i> vòli. <i>Fut.</i> vorrò. <i>Imp.</i> vògli, vogliate. <i>Subj.</i> vòglia etc., vogliamo, vogliate, vògliano		
vòlgere, <i>turn</i>	vòlsi	vòlto	
vòlvere, <i>turn</i>	vòlsi	vòlto	<i>Rare</i>
	Devolvere has a <i>past part.</i> devoluto		
votare, <i>empty</i>	<i>Ind. pres.</i> vuòto, vuòti, etc., diphthong occurring whenever the accent falls on o.		

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

- a, ad (39), at, to**
abbandonare abandon
abbasso below; downstairs
abbiamo *1 pl. pres. ind. of avere*
abitante *m.* inhabitant
abitare dwell, reside
abito *m.* coat
abituarsi (a) accustom oneself (to)
accadere happen
accanto (a) next, next door (to)
accendere light, kindle
accettare accept
acciaio *m.* steel
accidente *m.* accident
accomodarsi make oneself comfortable, sit down
accompagnare accompany; match
accordarsi agree
accordo *m.* agreement
accorgersi di notice, become aware of
accrescere increase
acqua *f.* water
acquistare acquire
acre sharp, bitter
adatto adapted, suitable
addosso (a) on top, on the back (of)
adriatico *adj.* Adriatic
adulto adult, mature
affare *m.* affair; *pl.* business
affermare affirm, declare
affettuoso affectionate, cordial
affisso *m.* placard, notice
affollato crowded, thronged
agguantare seize upon
agire act
agitatore *m.* agitator
agli, ai, 75
ago *m.* needle; hand (of clock)
Agostino Augustine
agosto *m.* August
l'Aia the Hague
aiutare help
al, allo, 75; alle sei at six o'clock
albergo *m.* hotel
albero *m.* tree; mast
alcuno some, some one
allegro joyful
allodola *f.* lark
allora then, at that time
almeno at least
alterare alter
altezza *f.* height; highness
alto high
altrettanto as much again
altro other; *∞!* of course!
altrui of others
alzarsi rise, get up
amare love
ambedue both
ambizione *f.* ambition
ambizioso ambitious
l'America *f.* America
americano American

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

amica (<i>pl. -che</i>) <i>f.</i> friend	aprile <i>m.</i> April
amico (<i>pl. -ci</i>) <i>m.</i> friend	aprire open
Amleto Hamlet	arancio <i>m.</i> orange-tree
ammalato ill	architetto <i>m.</i> architect
amministrativo administrative	ardere burn
ammirare admire	ardito bold
amore <i>m.</i> love	ardore <i>m.</i> ardor
anche also	argento <i>m.</i> silver
ancora yet, still, again	aria <i>f.</i> air
andare (149) go; andarsene (127) go away	Aristotile Aristotle
andò 3 <i>sg. p. abs. of andare</i>	armi <i>f. pl.</i> arms
anello <i>m.</i> ring	arrestare arrest
angelo <i>m.</i> angel	arrivare arrive
angolo <i>m.</i> corner; far ~ con be at the corner of	arrivo <i>m.</i> arrival
angusto narrow	arte <i>f.</i> art
annaffiare water	artista <i>m.</i> artist
annaffiatolo <i>m.</i> watering-pot	ascoltare listen
anno <i>m.</i> year; buon ~ Happy New Year	aspettare wait, await
annoverare enumerate	aspettativa <i>m.</i> expectancy
antemeridiano of the morning	assai very; much
antichità <i>f.</i> antiquity	assortito to match, like
anticipatamente beforehand, in ad- vance	assurdo absurd
antico ancient	astuccio <i>m.</i> sewing-case
antimilitarista <i>m.</i> anti-militarist	attendere await
antologia <i>f.</i> anthology	attento attentive; stare ~ pay at- tention
ape <i>f.</i> bee	attenzione <i>f.</i> attention; fare ~ pay attention
aperto open	attillato close fitting; well dressed
apparecchiare set table	attimo <i>m.</i> instant
appartamento <i>m.</i> apartment	attrarre draw, attract
appartenere belong	augurare wish, wish well
appassire wither	austriaco Austrian
appena hardly; no sooner	automobile <i>c.</i> automobile
applicare apply	autore <i>m.</i> author
appollaiarsi roost	autunno <i>m.</i> autumn
approvare approve	avanti before, ahead; ~ che <i>conj.</i> <i>w. subj.</i> before
appuntare pin	avaro <i>m.</i> miser
	avere (120) have; ~ da have to; aver

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

caldo , freddo, be hot, cold; aver	Belga (<i>pl.</i> -gi, -ghe) Belgian
fredda , furia, be in a hurry; avversia a male take ill, be offended	il Belgio Belgium
avvi <i>1 sg. fut. ind. of avere</i>	bellezza <i>f.</i> beauty
avvenire (138) happen	belligero pertaining to war
avventarsi a rush upon	bellicoso warlike
avverare aver, confirm	bellino pretty
avvertire advise, warn	bello fine, beautiful; bèll' e fatto
avvezzare accustom	ready-made
avviarsi take one's way	benchè <i>conj. w. subj.</i> although
avvicinarsi a approach	bene , bèn , well
avvisarsi bethink oneself	benefizio <i>m.</i> benefit
avviso <i>m.</i> placard	benissimo , benone , very well indeed
avvocato <i>m.</i> lawyer	benzina <i>f.</i> gasolene
azzurro blue	bere drink
	bianco white
babbo <i>m.</i> papa	biasmare blame
baciare kiss	bicchiere <i>m.</i> drinking-glass
bacio <i>m.</i> kiss	bigio gray
badare take care	biglietto <i>m.</i> ticket; ∞ d'andata e ritorno round-trip ticket
bagagliaio <i>m.</i> baggage-room	bilancio <i>m.</i> balance, account
bagaglio <i>m.</i> baggage, trunk	billione <i>m.</i> trillion (U.S.), billion (Eng.)
bagnato wet	bimbo , -a, baby
bagno <i>m.</i> bath	bisognare <i>impers.</i> need
balenare lighten	bisogno <i>m.</i> need
bambino , -a, child	bocconi on one's face
banda <i>f.</i> band	bqia <i>m.</i> executioner
bandiera <i>f.</i> flag	bolletta <i>f.</i> check, receipt
barattare exchange	bollire boil
barca <i>f.</i> boat	Borbone Bourbon
basso low	borsa <i>f.</i> purse, bag
bastare suffice, be enough	bqso <i>m.</i> wood
bastone <i>m.</i> cane	bottega <i>f.</i> shop
battaglia <i>f.</i> battle	bottiglia <i>f.</i> bottle
battere beat	bqve <i>m.</i> ox
baule <i>m.</i> trunk; fare il ∞ pack	braccio <i>m.</i> arm
one's trunk	brano <i>m.</i> shred, fragment
bàvero <i>m.</i> coat-collar	bravo brave; clever
bèbe <i>m.</i> baby	breccia <i>f.</i> breach
bèl <i>for bello</i>	brève short

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

britännico <i>Britannic</i>	capo <i>m.</i> head; <i>a</i> ~ <i>chino</i> with bowed head
bruciare <i>burn</i>	caporale <i>m.</i> corporal
bruscamente <i>abruptly</i>	cappello <i>m.</i> hat; ~ <i>sodo</i> derby hat; ~ <i>a cencio</i> soft hat
brutto <i>ugly</i>	carattere <i>m.</i> character, disposition
bùio <i>m.</i> dark; <i>al</i> ~ <i>in the dark</i>	carbonaro <i>m.</i> charcoal-burner
buono, buon, good; buon giorno good morning; <i>buona sera</i> good afternoon, good evening	cārcere <i>m.</i> prison
burro <i>m.</i> butter	cardo <i>m.</i> thistle
būssola <i>f.</i> compass, bearings	carezza <i>f.</i> caress
busta <i>f.</i> envelope	cārica <i>f.</i> load; office
buttare <i>throw; ~ via</i> throw away	caricare <i>load; wind up</i>
	cārico <i>loaded; wound up</i>
cacciare <i>hunt, drive out</i>	carino <i>charming, pretty</i>
cadere <i>fall</i>	Carlo <i>Charles</i>
caduco <i>weak</i>	carne <i>f.</i> meat
caffè <i>m.</i> coffee; <i>café</i>	caro <i>dear</i>
caldo <i>warm, hot; fa</i> ~ <i>it is warm</i> weather	carponi <i>on all fours</i>
calmo <i>calm</i>	carrozza <i>f.</i> carriage
calore <i>m.</i> heat	carta <i>f.</i> paper; ~ <i>protocollo</i> foolscap
calzino <i>m.</i> sock	cartasuga <i>f.</i> blotting-paper
calzolaio <i>m.</i> shoemaker	cartellino <i>m.</i> sheet, label
calzoni <i>m. pl.</i> trousers	cartello <i>m.</i> shop-sign
cambiare <i>change</i> [room	cartolaio <i>m.</i> stationer
cāmera <i>f.</i> chamber; ~ <i>da letto</i> bed-	cartolina postale <i>post card</i>
cameriere <i>m.</i> waiter	casa <i>f.</i> house; <i>a</i> ~ <i>homeward,</i> <i>home; in</i> ~ <i>at home; stare in</i> ~
camminare <i>walk</i>	<i>stay in; star di</i> ~ <i>reside</i>
campagna <i>f.</i> country	le Cascine "The Dairies," a park <i>in Florence</i>
campione <i>m.</i> sample	caso <i>m.</i> case; <i>in ogni</i> ~ <i>in any case;</i> ~ <i>mai</i> <i>in case</i>
cane <i>m.</i> dog	castello <i>m.</i> castle
cannone <i>m.</i> cannon	catena <i>f.</i> chain
cantare <i>sing</i>	cattivo <i>bad</i>
canzone <i>f.</i> song	cavaliere <i>m.</i> knight, man on horse- back
capello <i>m.</i> hair	cavallo <i>m.</i> horse; <i>andare a</i> ~ <i>ride</i> <i>horseback</i>
capino <i>m.</i> crown of hat	cavare <i>take out</i>
capire <i>understand</i>	
capitale <i>f.</i> capital	
capitare <i>chance to be, happen in</i>	
capitolo <i>m.</i> chapter	

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

cēdere yield	cinque five
cēlebre celebrated	cioccolata <i>f.</i> chocolate
celēste light blue	circa about, approximately
cēncio <i>m.</i> rag; cappello a ~ soft hat	Ciro Cyrus
cēnno <i>m.</i> signal, nod	città <i>f.</i> city
centēesimo <i>m.</i> centime.	cittadino <i>m.</i> citizen
centimetro <i>m.</i> centimeter	ciuco <i>m.</i> donkey
centinaio <i>m.</i> collective hundred	civetta <i>f.</i> coquette
cēto hundred, a hundred	civile civilized; civic; polite
centrale central	civiltà <i>f.</i> civilization
cētro <i>m.</i> center; al ~ down town	classe <i>f.</i> class
cercare look for; ~ di (<i>w. inf.</i>) try	clāssico classic
cervello <i>m.</i> brain	cogli, còi, 75
Cēzare Caesar	cōgliere gather, pluck
cessare cease	cognata <i>f.</i> sister-in-law
chē which, that	cognato <i>m.</i> brother-in-law
chi who, whom	còl, còllo, còlla, 75
chiacchierare chat	colazione <i>f.</i> luncheon; far ~ take
chiamare call; chiamarsi be called,	luncheon
be named	collana <i>f.</i> necklace
Chiara Clara	còllera <i>f.</i> anger
chiaro clear, light (color)	collina <i>f.</i> hill
chicca <i>f.</i> sweetmeat	còlmo <i>m.</i> summit
chiēsa <i>f.</i> church	colorato colored; tan
chilo <i>m.</i> kilogram	colore <i>m.</i> color
chino bent; a capo ~ with bowed	còlpa <i>f.</i> blame, fault
head	coltello <i>m.</i> knife
chiòcciola <i>f.</i> snail; scala a ~ wind-	comandare command
ing stair	comando <i>m.</i> command
chirurgo <i>m.</i> surgeon	combattere fight
chiūdere shut	còme as, like
ci, ce, pron. us; <i>adv.</i> there, at it, to	cominciare begin
it; c'è, ci sòno , there is, there are	commissione <i>f.</i> errand
ciarpetta <i>f.</i> necktie, scarf	commosso moved
ciascuno each one	commovēte moving
cieco blind	còmodo convenient, comfortable;
cilindro <i>m.</i> cylinder; cappello a ~	far ~ come handy; star ~ be
tall hat	comfortable
cima <i>f.</i> summit; in ~ a on top of	compagno, -a , companion
cinquanta fifty	comparire appear

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

compire complete, accomplish	convenire (138) be suitable, be fitting
compleanno <i>m.</i> birthday	conversazione <i>f.</i> conversation
complimento <i>m.</i> compliment; far complimenti stand on ceremony	copertone <i>m.</i> blanket; tire
compra <i>f.</i> purchase	copiare copy
comprare buy	coppia <i>f.</i> couple
comunicante connecting, communicating	coprire cover
comunicare communicate	coraggio <i>m.</i> courage
con with	cornetta <i>f.</i> horn
condannare condemn	correggere correct
condurre conduct	correre run
confine <i>m.</i> boundary	corrispondere correspond
conforto <i>m.</i> comfort	corsa <i>f.</i> course, run
confrontare compare	cortese kind
congiurare conspire	corto short
conoscenza <i>f.</i> acquaintance	cosa <i>f.</i> thing
conoscere know, be acquainted with	coscienza <i>f.</i> consciousness
conquistatore <i>m.</i> conqueror	così thus, so
considerare consider	costa <i>f.</i> coast
considerabile considerable	costaggiù down there
consigliere <i>m.</i> adviser, counselor	costare cost
consiglio <i>m.</i> advice	cotone <i>m.</i> cotton
consistere consist	cottilmo <i>m.</i> contract; a ~ by the piece
consule <i>m.</i> consul	cravatta <i>f.</i> necktie, cravat
consumato used up	credere believe
contadino , -a, peasant, farmer	creocere grow
contante <i>m.</i> counting, cash; a contanti in cash	cristiano Christian
conte <i>m.</i> count	Cristoforo Colombo Christopher Columbus
contentarsi (di) content oneself (with)	crociata <i>f.</i> crusade
contento contented	cucchiaino <i>m.</i> spoon
contessa <i>f.</i> countess	cucina <i>f.</i> kitchen; cookery
continuare continue	cucire sew
conto <i>m.</i> bill; tornar ~ be of advantage; non mērita il ~ it is not worth while	cugino , -a, cousin
contrario contrary	cui to whom, of whom, to which, of which
contro against	cultura <i>f.</i> culture
	cuocere cook
	cuoio <i>m.</i> leather

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

cuore <i>m.</i> heart	diciassette seventeen
da by, from, for, at, worth	diciotto eighteen
dacchè since (<i>temporal</i>)	dicono 3 <i>pl. pres. ind. of dire</i>
dagli, dai, dal, dallo, dalla, 75	dieci ten
danno 3 <i>pl. of dare</i>	dietro a behind
danno <i>m.</i> damage, injury	difendere defend
dappertutto everywhere	difesa <i>f.</i> defense
dare (131) give; ~ <i>su</i> face on; ~	difetto <i>m.</i> fault, defect
il buon viaggio wish (one) a pleas-	difficile difficult
ant journey	diffondere scatter
davanti a in front of	difilato straight ahead
davvero indeed	dighiacciare thaw
décimo tenth	dimenticare forget
decina <i>f. (collective)</i> ten	diminuire diminish
dedicare dedicate	dimorare dwell, reside
degenerare degenerate	dimostrare show
degli, dei, del, dello, della, 75	dinanzi a in front of
denaro <i>m.</i> money	dinastia <i>f.</i> dynasty
dente <i>m.</i> tooth	dio <i>m.</i> god
dentro (di) within	dire (175) say
deplorare regret, lament	direzione <i>f.</i> direction
deprimere depress	dirigere direct
deputato <i>m.</i> deputy, representative	discosto (a) distant (from)
desiderare desire	discreto modest, discreet
desiderio <i>m.</i> desire	discutere discuss
designare dine	disfatta <i>f.</i> defeat
destro right	disgrazia <i>f.</i> misfortune
determinare determine	disgraziatamente unfortunately
detto <i>p. p. of dire</i>	dispaccio <i>m.</i> telegram
dèvi, deve, 2-3 sg. pres. ind. of dovere	disperato desperate
di of; di là da beyond; di qua da	dispiacente sorry
on this side of	dispiacere displease
di <i>m.</i> day	disse 3 <i>sg. p. abs. of dire</i>
dia <i>sg. pres. subj. of dare</i>	distendere spread
diálogo <i>m.</i> dialogue	ditale <i>m.</i> thimble
dica <i>sg. pres. subj. of dire</i>	dito <i>m.</i> finger
dice says	diventare become
dicembre <i>m.</i> December	diverso different
dichiarare declare	divertirsi amuse oneself
diciannove nineteen	dividere divide

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

dà 1 <i>sg. pres. ind. of dare</i>	ecco here is, there is, behold
dobbiamo 1 <i>pl. pres. ind. of dovere</i>	eco c. echo
dodici twelve	educato polite
dolce <i>m.</i> sweetmeat, dessert; <i>adj.</i> sweet	effettuare effect
dolere (172) grieve; <i>w. dat.</i> ache	egli, ei, he
dolorosamente sorrowfully, painfully	eglino they (<i>m.</i>)
domandare ask; ∞ di ask for (a person)	elegante elegant
domani to-morrow	elevato elevated
domenica <i>f.</i> Sunday	eliggere elect
domestico <i>m.</i> servant; <i>adj.</i> domestic	ella she
donna <i>f.</i> woman; woman-servant	elleno they (<i>f.</i>)
dopo <i>prep.</i> after; ∞ che <i>conj.</i> after	elogio <i>m.</i> praise, eulogy
doppio double	emozione <i>f.</i> emotion
dormire sleep	energia <i>f.</i> energy
dorso <i>m.</i> back	Enrico Henry
dotare endow	entrambi both
dotto learned	entrare enter
dove where	entusiasmo <i>m.</i> enthusiasm
dovere <i>v.</i> (188) owe; <i>m.</i> duty	era <i>f.</i> era
dovesse 3 <i>sg. p. subj. of dovere</i>	eredità <i>f.</i> heredity
dovunque <i>conj. w. subj.</i> wherever	erpe <i>m.</i> hero
dozzina <i>f.</i> dozen	eroicamente heroically
drammatico dramatic	esclusivamente exclusively
dubitare doubt	esempio <i>m.</i> example
duca <i>m.</i> duke	esercito <i>m.</i> army
ducato <i>m.</i> duchy	esiliare exile
due two; Due Sicilie <i>f. pl.</i> Kingdom of the Two Sicilies	esitare hesitate
dunque then, accordingly	esperto skillful, expert
duodécimo twelfth	esporre (196) expose
duomo <i>m.</i> cathedral	espressione <i>f.</i> expression
durare last	esprime 3 <i>sg. pres. ind. of esprimere</i>
e, ed (39), and	esprimere express
è is	essere (96) be
eccitamento <i>m.</i> excitement	esso, -a, he, him, she, her, it
	estate <i>f.</i> summer
	età <i>f.</i> age; ∞ di at the age of
	eterno eternal
	etrusco Etruscan
	evenienza <i>f.</i> event, occurrence
	evitare avoid

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

fa 3 <i>sg. pres. ind. of fare</i>	ferro <i>m.</i> iron
fa' 2 <i>sg. imper. of fare</i>	ferroviario railway (<i>adj.</i>)
facchino <i>m.</i> porter	fervere burn, be fervent
faccia <i>f.</i> face; in ~ a opposite	festa <i>f.</i> holiday
faccio 1 <i>sg. pres. ind. of fare</i>	fiacco weak
faceva 3 <i>sg. past descr. of fare</i>	fico <i>m.</i> fig
facile easy	figlia <i>f.</i> daughter
facoltà <i>f.</i> college (of university)	figlio <i>m.</i> son
falco <i>m.</i> falcon, hawk	figurare figure
fallire fail	figurarsi imagine
fallo <i>m.</i> miss, failure, error; <i>senza</i> ~ without fail	figurino <i>m.</i> pattern; manikin
fame <i>f.</i> hunger; <i>aver</i> ~ be hungry	Filippo Philip
famiglia <i>f.</i> family	filosofico philosophical
famoso famous	finalmente finally
fango <i>m.</i> mud	finchè as long as; ~ non until
fantasia <i>f.</i> ornament	fine <i>f.</i> end; <i>m.</i> aim; <i>alla</i> ~ at last
fare (168) make, do; <i>far caldo</i> be hot weather; <i>far freddo</i> be cold weather; <i>far colazione</i> take break- fast; <i>far passare, far entrare</i> , show in; <i>far tardi</i> be late	finestra <i>f.</i> window
fatale fatal	finire finish
fatica <i>f.</i> fatigue, effort	fino fine
faticoso wearisome	fino a up to, as far as; fin da from (<i>time</i>); fin dove how far
fatto <i>m.</i> fact, deed; <i>p. p. of fare</i>	finzione <i>f.</i> fiction, pretense
favore <i>m.</i> favor; <i>per</i> ~ please	fiocco <i>m.</i> bow
favorire favor, favor with	fiore <i>m.</i> flower
fazzoletto <i>m.</i> handkerchief	florentino Florentine
febbraio <i>m.</i> February	florire bloom
fecero 3 <i>pl. p. abs. of fare</i>	florito in bloom
fede <i>f.</i> faith	Firenze Florence
fedeltà <i>f.</i> fidelity	fischio <i>m.</i> whistle
felice happy	fiume <i>m.</i> river
feltro <i>m.</i> felt	fodera <i>f.</i> lining
ferire wound, strike	foglia <i>f.</i> leaf
ferita <i>f.</i> wound	fondino <i>m.</i> shape, foundation
fermaglio <i>m.</i> brooch	fondo <i>m.</i> back, bottom, end; in ~ a at the back <i>etc.</i> of
fermarsì stop	forbici <i>f. pl.</i> scissors
fermo firm, still	forchetta <i>f.</i> fork
	forestiere foreigner
	forma <i>f.</i> form, last
	formicolare swarm

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

fornaio *m.* baker
fornire furnish
forse perhaps
forte strong
fortuna *f.* fortune, good luck
forza *f.* force; a ∞ di by dint of
forzato forced
fotografia *f.* photograph
fra among, between
francese French
Francesco Francis
la Francia France
francobollo *m.* postage-stamp
frate *m.* friar, brother
fratello *m.* brother
freddo cold; fa ∞ it is cold
freno *m.* brake
freSCO cool
fretta *f.* haste; aver ∞ be in haste
frettoloso hurried [resist]
fronte *f.* front; forehead; far ∞ a
frugale frugal
frutto *m.* fruit
fu the late, deceased
fucilazione *f.* execution, shooting
fuggire flee
fulmine *m.* thunderbolt
fumo *m.* smoke
fungo *m.* mushroom
fuoco *m.* fire
fuori outside; ∞ di porta outside
the city; andar ∞ go out

galantuomo *m.* honorable man
gallina *f.* hen
ganci *m. pl.* hooks (and eyes)
garofano *m.* carnation
gattino *m.* kitten
gelare freeze
gelato *m.* ice-cream

generale *adj.* general; *m.* general
generalmente usually, generally
genere *m.* sort, kind
genero *m.* son-in-law
generoso generous
genitori *m. pl.* parents
gennaio *m.* January
gente *f.* folk, people
gentile kind, agreeable
ghiacciare freeze
ghiaccio *m.* ice
già already; once, formerly
giacchetta *f.* jacket
il Giappone Japan
giardino *m.* garden
ginocchio *m.* knee
ginocchi on one's knees
giocare (110, d) play
gioia *f.* joy
gioielliere *m.* jeweler
gioiello *m.* jewel
Giorgio George
giornale *m.* newspaper; diary
giornata *f.* day, period of a day;
a ∞ by the day
giorno *m.* day; di ∞ by day
giovane young
giovane *to*, young person
Giovanni, Giovannino, John
giovare be of use
giovedì *m.* Thursday
gioventù *f.* youth
girare turn
giratina *f.* short walk
giro *m.* tour, circular journey
giù down
giubba *f.* dress-coat
giudizioso sensible, judicious
giugno *m.* June
Giulio Julius

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

giungere arrive	ignorante ignorant
giurare swear	il, i, the (<i>m. sg. and pl.</i>)
Giuseppe Joseph	illustre illustrious
giusto just, right	imbandire serve (a meal)
gli to him; the (<i>m. pl., 71, b, c</i>)	immediatamente immediately
gloria <i>f.</i> glory	imparare learn
gnocco <i>m.</i> dumpling	impari odd, uneven
gomito <i>m.</i> elbow	impedire prevent, hinder
gondola <i>f.</i> gondola	imperatore <i>m.</i> emperor
gota <i>f.</i> cheek	impermeabile <i>m.</i> rain-coat
governatore <i>m.</i> governor	impero <i>m.</i> empire
governo <i>m.</i> government	impervio impervious
grammatica <i>f.</i> grammar	impiccare hang (a man)
grande large, great	impiegato <i>m.</i> employee
granducato <i>m.</i> grand duchy	imporre (196) impose
grasso fat	importare import
grave heavy	impossibile impossible
grazie <i>f. pl.</i> thanks	impostare post, mail
grazioso pretty, charming, graceful	imprigionare imprison
greco Greek	improvviso unforeseen; all' ~ un-
gridare cry, shout	expectedly
grigio gray	imprudente imprudent
grossezza size, magnitude	in in, into
grasso big	incassare set
gru <i>f.</i> crane	incasso <i>m.</i> receipts
gruppo <i>m.</i> group	inchiostro <i>m.</i> ink
guadagnare earn	incominciare commence
guancia <i>f.</i> cheek	incontrare meet
guantaio <i>m.</i> glover	indarno in vain
quanto <i>m.</i> glove	indietro back, backward
guardare look, look at	indipendenza <i>f.</i> independence
guardia <i>f.</i> conductor, guard	individuo individual
guarire recover, be cured	indomani <i>m.</i> (the) next day
guarnizione <i>f.</i> trimming	indovinare guess
guerra <i>f.</i> war	industria <i>f.</i> industry
guida <i>f.</i> guide	inesauribile inexhaustible
gusto <i>m.</i> taste	infatti in fact
	infelice unhappy
idea <i>f.</i> idea	inferiore inferior, lower
ieri yesterday	inferno <i>m.</i> Inferno, hell

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

infimo lowest
inganno *m.* deceit
ingegnere *m.* engineer
ingegno *m.* talent, genius
l'Inghilterra *f.* England
inglese English
Inglese *m.* Englishman
ingrato ungrateful
innalzare raise
insegna *f.* shop sign
insegnare teach
insieme together
insigne remarkable
insudiciare soil
integro whole, entire
intelligente intelligent
intendere understand
interrotto interrupted
intitolare entitle
intravedere glimpse
invecchiare grow old
invece instead; on the contrary
inverno *m.* winter
invviare send
io I
isola *f.* island
istituire establish
istitutore, -trice, instructor, teacher
istituzione *f.* institution
l'Italia *f.* Italy
italiano Italian

la, le, the (*f. sg. and pl.*); her,
 them (*f.*)
là there
labbro *m.* lip
lagnarsi complain
lago *m.* lake
laico lay, layman
lāmpada *f.* lamp

lana *f.* wool
lanciare throw
lapis *m.* pencil
larghezza *f.* width
largo wide
lasciare leave; ∞ **fare a** leave it to
latino Latin
latta *f.* tin
latte *m.* milk
lavamano *m.* washstand
lavarsi bathe, wash
lavorare work
lavoro *m.* task
le to her; the (*f. pl.*)
legge *f.* law
leggendo reading
leggere read
leggiere light; light-colored
legno *m.* wood; carriage
lei her; you, *sg.* (65, a)
lettera *f.* letter
letteratura *f.* literature
letto *p. p.* of **leggere**
letto *m.* bed
levare lift; **levarsi** rise; take off
lezione *f.* lesson
li them (*m.*)
lì there
liberazione *f.* liberation
libero free
libertà *f.* liberty
libraio *m.* bookseller
libro *m.* book
licenza *f.* leave
lieto gay, cheerful
limone *m.* lemon
lingua *f.* language; tongue
lira *f.* lira, twenty cents
liscio smooth, plain
lite *f.* lawsuit

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

livornese Leghornese
Livorno Leghorn
lò him; the (*m. sg.*, 71, b)
lodare praise
il Lombardo-Vēneto Lombardo-Venetia
Lōndra London
lontano (da) distant (from)
lōro their, them; you, *pl.* (65, a)
lōtta *f.* struggle
lōtto *m.* lottery
lūglio *m.* July
lui him
Luigi Louis
lume *m.* light, lamp
lunedì *m.* Monday
lunghezza *f.* length
lungi far
lungo long
luogo *m.* place
lusso *m.* luxury
lustrare polish, black
lustrascarpe *m.* bootblack
lutto *m.* mourning; a ∞ in mourning

ma but
mācchia *f.* stain; thicket; brambles
mācchina *f.* machine; ∞ da scrivere typewriter
madre *f.* mother
maestà *f.* majesty
maestro, -a, teacher
māggio *m.* May
maggiore greater; elder
mai ever; non . . . ∞ never
malamente badly
malanno *m.* misfortune
malattia *f.* illness
male badly; far ∞ a hurt; non c'è ∞ pretty well; ∞ di testa headache

malgrado *m.* displeasure; ∞ che *conj. w. subj.* notwithstanding that
mamma, mamma, *f.* mamma
māmmola *f.* violet
mancanza *f.* lack; sentirela ∞ di miss
mancare fail, be lacking
māncia *f.* fee, tip
mandare send
mane *f.* morning (*poet.*); da ∞ a sera from morning till night
mangiare eat
mānica *f.* sleeve
mānico *m.* handle
maniera *f.* manner
mano *f.* hand; a ∞ by hand; di seconda ∞ at second hand; dar la ∞ a shake hands with
māntice *m.* bellows; automobile-top
mārcia *f.* march
marciapiēde *m.* sidewalk
mare *m.* sea; al ∞ by the sea; in ∞ at sea
marina *f.* navy
marinaio *m.* sailor
marito *m.* husband
martedì *m.* Tuesday
martirio *m.* martyrdom
marzo *m.* March
māschera *f.* mask
maschio male
māssimo greatest
matēria *f.* subject, matter, material
mattina *f.* morning
mazzolino *m.* bouquet
medesimo same, self
medicina *f.* medicine
mēdico *m.* physician
mēglio better (*adv.*)
mēla *f.* apple
memōria *f.* memory

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

meno less (<i>adv.</i>); fare a ~ di do without; a ~ che <i>conj. w. subj.</i> unless; too little	misero miserable, wretched
mente <i>f.</i> mind; a ~ by heart	misura <i>f.</i> measure; su ~ to order
mentire lie	mite gentle
mentre while	Mōdena a city in northern Italy
merciaio <i>m.</i> dry-goods merchant	modenese of Modena
mercoledì <i>m.</i> Wednesday	moderno modern
meridionale southern	modesto modest
meritare deserve	modista <i>f.</i> milliner
meſe <i>m.</i> month	mōglie (<i>pl. mōgli</i>) <i>f.</i> wife
meſſa <i>f.</i> Mass	mōlla <i>f.</i> spring, mainspring
mestiere <i>m.</i> trade, craft	mōlle <i>f. pl.</i> tongs
metà <i>f.</i> half	moltitudine <i>f.</i> multitude
metallo <i>m.</i> metal	mōlto , -i, much, many
metro <i>m.</i> meter	momento <i>m.</i> moment; a momenti in a minute
metrōpoli <i>f.</i> metropolis	mōnaco <i>m.</i> monk
mēttēre put, put on; mēttersi a be- gin; mēttersi a sedere sit down	monarca <i>m.</i> monarch
mezzanotte <i>f.</i> midnight	monārchico monarchical
mezzo <i>m.</i> half; middle; in ~ a in the middle of	mōndo <i>m.</i> world
mezzogiorno <i>m.</i> mid-day; south	monello <i>m.</i> rascal
mi, me, me	moneta <i>f.</i> coin, piece of money
miglio (<i>pl. miglia</i>) <i>m.</i> mile	montagna <i>f.</i> mountain
migliore better (<i>adj.</i>)	montare mount, climb
Milano Milan	montone <i>m.</i> sheep
milione <i>m.</i> million	morire (156) die
militare military	mormorare murmur
militarismo <i>m.</i> militarism	morte <i>f.</i> death
militarista <i>m.</i> militarist	morto dead
mille thousand, a thousand	mostrare show
minaccia <i>f.</i> threat	mōstro <i>m.</i> monster
minacciare threaten	mōto <i>m.</i> motion
miniera <i>f.</i> mine	movimento <i>m.</i> movement
minimo least	muggire low
ministro <i>m.</i> member of Cabinet	mughetto <i>m.</i> lily-of-the-valley
minore less; younger	muovere (110, <i>d.</i> 1) move
minuto <i>m.</i> minute	muricciuolo <i>m.</i> low wall
mio my	muro <i>m.</i> wall
	muſeo <i>m.</i> museum
	mutare change; ~ di pensiero change one's mind

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

Nāpoli Naples
nāscere be born
nascōndere hide
nascōsto hidden; di ∞ secretly
nastro, nastrino, m. ribbon
Natale m. Christmas; buōn ∞
 Merry Christmas
natura f. nature
naturale natural
navale naval
nazionale national
nazionalità f. nationality
nazione f. nation
ne adv. thence; *pron.* of it, of them
ne conj. neither, nor; ∞ . . . ∞ neither
 . . . nor
nebbia f. fog
necessārio necessary
negōzio m. shop
nel, nello, nella, negli, nei, 75
nemico m. enemy
nemmeno not even
neppure nor . . . either; not even
nero black
nessuno no one
neve f. snow
nevicare snow
nido m. nest
niēte nothing; you're welcome
nipote, nipotino, m. nephew
nitrire neigh
no no
nōbile noble
noce f. walnut
noi we, us
noia f. annoyance; dar ∞ a annoy
noioso annoying
nome m. name
non not, no
nondimēno nevertheless

nonno m. grandfather, grandparent
nōno ninth
nonostante che conj. w. subj. not-
 withstanding that
nostro our, ours
notizie f. pl. news
notte f. night; di ∞ by night
novanta ninety
nove nine
novembre m. November
novità f. novelty, notion
nozione f. notion, idea
nozze f. pl. wedding
nulla nothing
nuora f. daughter-in-law
nuovo new; di ∞ again
nutrire nourish

o, od (39), or; o . . . o either . . . or
o or o now, well now
occasione f. occasion, opportunity
occhio m. eye; a quattr'occhi tête-à-
 tête; dar nell' ∞ be conspicuous
occidentale western
occorrere be necessary; **occorrente**
 requisite, wanted
occupare occupy
offrire offer
oggi to-day
ogni every
ognuno every one
olmo m. elm
ombrellō m. umbrella
onda f. wave
onomāstico m. saint's-day
onore m. honor
opera f. work
operaio m. workman
ora now; or ∞ just now; or sōno ago
oramāi, ormāi, henceforth

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

ordinamento <i>m.</i> arrangement	paradiſo <i>m.</i> paradise
ordinare order	paragonare compare
ordine <i>m.</i> order	pareggiare equal
orecchino <i>m.</i> earring [deaf ear	parente <i>m.</i> relative
orecchio <i>m.</i> ear; ~ da mercante	parere (161) appear
organizzazione <i>f.</i> organization	pari even
orlo <i>m.</i> edge	Parigi Paris
oro <i>m.</i> gold	parlare speak
orologio <i>m.</i> watch	pârroco <i>m.</i> parish priest
orrore <i>m.</i> horror	parte <i>f.</i> part, side, share
osare dare	partire depart
oscuro obscure	parvenire (138) arrive
osservare observe	Pasqua <i>f.</i> Easter
osso <i>m.</i> bone	passare pass
ottanta eighty	passaggiare walk
ottavo eighth	passeggiata <i>f.</i> walk; fare una ~
ottimo best	take a walk
otto eight	passaggio <i>m.</i> walk
ottobre <i>m.</i> October	passo <i>m.</i> step; passage
ove where	pasta <i>f.</i> cake
ovvero or else	patire suffer
 	patria <i>f.</i> country, fatherland
pacco <i>m.</i> parcel	patrimônio <i>m.</i> patrimony
pace <i>f.</i> peace	patriota <i>m.</i> patriot
padre <i>m.</i> father	patto <i>m.</i> bargain; a ~ chę <i>conj. w.</i>
padrone <i>m.</i> landlord	<i>subj.</i> on condition that
paesaggio <i>m.</i> landscape	paûra <i>f.</i> fear; aver ~ di be afraid of
paese <i>m.</i> country; village	pazienza <i>f.</i> patience
pagare pay, pay for	pazzo mad
página <i>f.</i> page	peccato <i>m.</i> sin; what a pity
paglia <i>f.</i> straw; muovere ~ stir	peggio worse (<i>adv.</i>)
paio <i>m.</i> (<i>pl.</i> paio) pair	peggiore worse (<i>adj.</i>)
palazzo <i>m.</i> palace	pei, pei, 75
palla <i>f.</i> ball	pelle <i>f.</i> skin
panchetto <i>m.</i> footstool	pellegrino <i>m.</i> pilgrim
pane <i>m.</i> bread	penna <i>f.</i> pen; ~ a serbatoio fountain
paniere <i>m.</i> basket	pen
panna <i>f.</i> cream; in ~ broken down	pensare think, reflect; ~ a think of
panorama <i>m.</i> view	pensiero <i>m.</i> thought; dar ~ a worry
Päolo Paul	(<i>tr.</i>); stare in ~ worry (<i>intr.</i>)

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

pensione <i>f.</i> board; boarding-house; boarding-school	pieno full
pentirsi repent	pietra <i>f.</i> stone
per for; per uno apiece	prendere take
pera <i>f.</i> pear	piovere rain
perchè why; because; so that	pittore <i>m.</i> painter, artist
perciò therefore	più more; too much
perdere lose	piuma <i>f.</i> plume
peregrinare wander, go on pilgrimage	piuolo <i>m.</i> rung; scala a piuoli ladder
pericolo <i>m.</i> danger	piuttosto rather
pericoloso dangerous	pneumatico <i>m.</i> tire
permesso <i>m.</i> permission, permit me	poco <i>adv.</i> little, a little; <i>pl. pochi</i> <i>adj.</i> few, a few; a \sim a \sim little by little
permettere permit	poeta <i>m.</i> poet
pero <i>m.</i> pear-tree	poetare poetize
però however	poi then
perseguitare persecute	poichè since (<i>causal</i>)
persona <i>f.</i> person	politica <i>f.</i> politics
pesante heavy	politico <i>adj.</i> political; <i>m.</i> statesman
pesco <i>m.</i> peach-tree	polvere <i>f.</i> powder
pessimo worst	pomeridiano of the afternoon
Petrarca Petrarch	pompare pump
petto <i>m.</i> breast	ponte <i>m.</i> bridge
pezzo <i>m.</i> piece	pontificio papal, pontifical
piacere a (185) please; per \sim please; far \sim a do a favor for	popolo <i>m.</i> people
piaggia <i>f.</i> slope	porgere stretch out
piangere weep	porre (186) put
pianista <i>m.</i> pianist	porta <i>f.</i> door, gate
piano <i>m.</i> plain; story; <i>adv.</i> softly, gently	portare carry
pianta <i>f.</i> plant	portata <i>f.</i> reach, ability; a \sim di mano within reach of one's hand
piattino (m.) da tazza saucer	porto <i>m.</i> harbor
piatto <i>m.</i> plate, dish; course	posata <i>f.</i> place at table, cover
piazza <i>f.</i> square, open place	posizione <i>f.</i> position, location
piccino tiny	possibile possible
piccolo small	possibilità <i>f.</i> possibility
piède <i>m.</i> foot; a piédi on foot	potere <i>1 sg. pres. ind. of potere</i>
pièga <i>f.</i> plait	posta <i>f.</i> post, mail; a \sim on purpose
il Piemonte Piedmont	postale postal; cartolina \sim post card
piemontese Piedmontese	postino <i>m.</i> postman
	posto <i>m.</i> place, room

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

potere (168) can, be able; non ~ a meno di cannot help	problema <i>m.</i> problem
potrebbero 3 <i>pl. past fut. of potere</i>	produzione <i>f.</i> production
povero poor	professore <i>m.</i> professor
povertà <i>f.</i> poverty	profondamente profoundly
pranzare dine	proibire prevent, forbid
pranzo <i>m.</i> dinner	promettere promise
pratica <i>f.</i> practice	pronto ready; all aboard
pratico practical; ~ di familiar with	proprietà <i>f.</i> property
prato <i>m.</i> meadow	proprio own; exactly
preferire prefer	prova <i>f.</i> trial; fitting
pregare ask, pray	provare try, try on
pregio <i>m.</i> value	prudente prudent
prego don't mention it	pulire clean
prendere take; prendersela take offense	punire punish
preoccuparsi di be concerned with	puntare aim
preparare prepare	punto <i>m.</i> point
presentare present	purchase <i>conj. w. subj.</i> provided that
presidente <i>m.</i> president	pure however; pray
prestare lend	purgatorio <i>m.</i> purgatory
presto quickly, soon	
presumere assume	qua here
prevalere (220) prevail	quaderno <i>m.</i> note-book
prezioso precious	quadrettino <i>m.</i> check
prezzo <i>m.</i> price	quadro <i>m.</i> picture
prigione <i>f.</i> prison	qualche (<i>sg. only</i>) some
prima before, earlier; quanto ~ as soon as possible; ~ che <i>conj. w. subj.</i> before; ~ di <i>prep.</i> before	quale , -i, such as
primavera <i>f.</i> spring	qualora whenever
primitivo primitive	qualunque whatever
primo first	quando when; di ~ in ~ from time to time
principale principal	quanto how much; in ~ a as for, regarding; per ~ however
principe <i>m.</i> prince	quaranta forty
principessa <i>f.</i> princess	quarto <i>m.</i> quarter, fourth
principiare begin	quattordici fourteen
principio <i>m.</i> beginning; fin dal ~ from the first	quattro four
	quello that; quel che that which, what
	quercia <i>f.</i> oak
	questo this; quest' altro next, coming

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

quiete <i>f.</i> quiet	riabbracciare embrace again
quindici fifteen	riaprire reopen
quinto fifth	riavere recover, get back
	ricco rich
raccomandare recommend; raccomandarsi warn, urge	ricevere receive
raccomandazione <i>f.</i> warning, recommendation	richiedere demand
raccontare narrate	ricontare count over
rado rare; di ∞ seldom	ricordarsi di remember
raffreddore <i>m.</i> cold; prendere un ∞ catch cold	ridare give again, give back
ragazza <i>f.</i> girl	ridere laugh
ragazzo <i>m.</i> boy	ridicolo ridiculous
ragione <i>f.</i> reason; aver ∞ be right	rifare remake, rebuild
rallentare slacken speed	rifiutare refuse
rame <i>m.</i> copper, brass	rigato striped
rappresentare represent	rigoroso rigorous
re <i>m.</i> king	rimanere (129) remain
reale royal	rimedio <i>m.</i> remedy; non c'è ∞ there is no help for it
recare bring, take; recarsi take one's way	rimproverare reprove
recente recent; di ∞ recently	rimprovero <i>m.</i> reproof
recluta <i>f.</i> recruit	rincrescere <i>impers.</i> pain, cause sorrow; mi rincresce I'm sorry
redimere redeem	rinomato famous
redingote (<i>Fr.</i>) <i>f.</i> frock-coat	rinunziare a renounce
reggere rule	riparare take refuge
Reggio a city in northern Italy	ripetere repeat
regina <i>f.</i> queen	risata <i>f.</i> laugh, laughter
regnante <i>m.</i> ruler	rischio <i>m.</i> risk
regno <i>m.</i> kingdom	riso <i>m.</i> laugh
relativo relating	risorgimento <i>m.</i> resurrection
remo <i>m.</i> oar; barca a ∞ row-boat	risparmiare save, spare
Reno Rhine	rispettabile respectable
repubblicano republican	rispondere respond
resistenza <i>f.</i> resistance	risultato <i>m.</i> result
restare remain	ritornare return
resto <i>m.</i> rest; change (money)	ritratto <i>m.</i> portrait
rete <i>f.</i> net	riunire assemble
retta <i>f.</i> heed; dar ∞ give heed	riuscire (204) succeed
	rivedere see again; a rivederla au revoir

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

rivoltare turn back	sarta <i>f.</i> dressmaker
rivoluzionário revolutionary	sarto <i>m.</i> tailor
rqba (<i>collective</i>) <i>f.</i> things	sāvio wise
rocchetto <i>m.</i> spool	la Savqia Savoy
Rqma Rome	qbadigliare yawn
romanzo <i>m.</i> novel	qbagliare make a mistake
rōmpere break	qbarazzare rid
rqsa <i>f.</i> rose	qbarcare land
rōsso red	qbarco <i>m.</i> disembarkation
rqta <i>f.</i> wheel	qbattere rout
rotare (110, <i>d</i>) turn	scaffale <i>m.</i> shelf
rovęscio <i>m.</i> reverse side; a ∞ up- side down; piqvere a ∞ rain in torrents	scala <i>f.</i> stair; ∞ a chiqcciola winding stair; ∞ a piupli ladder
rōzzo rough	scalino <i>m.</i> step of stair
rumorqso noisy	scarafāggio <i>m.</i> beetle
	scārico run down; free, unburdened
sābato <i>m.</i> Saturday	scarpa <i>f.</i> shoe
sacco <i>m.</i> bag	scātola <i>f.</i> box
sacrifizio <i>m.</i> sacrifice	scęgliere (211) choose
sacro sacred	scellerato criminal
sala <i>f.</i> hall; ∞ da pranzo dining-room	scęndere descend
salire go up	schianto <i>m.</i> crash
salita <i>f.</i> rise, slope	schioppo <i>m.</i> gun
salqne <i>m.</i> parlor	scięnza <i>f.</i> science
salotto <i>m.</i> sitting-room	scintilla <i>f.</i> spark
saltare in aria be blown up	sciqlto loose
salutare salute	sciqlpero <i>m.</i> strike
salute <i>f.</i> health, safety, salvation	sciupare spoil
saluto <i>m.</i> greeting	scqgliq <i>m.</i> reef
salvare save	scolare <i>m.</i> pupil
salvezza <i>f.</i> safety	scolāstico scholastic
salvo safe; in ∞ in safety	scollato low-necked
sangue <i>m.</i> blood	scommęssa <i>f.</i> wager
santo <i>m.</i> saint; <i>adj.</i> holy	scompartimento <i>m.</i> compartment
santo, san, Saint	scoppo <i>m.</i> purpose
sapęre (132) learn, know, know how; ∞ di smack of	scoppiare burst
sapięnte wise	scoprire discover
saracino Saracen	scorso last, past
	scozzęse Scotch; checked, plaid
	scricchiolare creak

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

scrittore <i>m.</i> writer	servire serve; ∞ di serve as; servirsi di make use of
scrivere write	servizio, servizino , <i>m.</i> service
scudo <i>m.</i> shield	sessanta sixty
scuola <i>f.</i> school	sesto sixth
scuotere (110, <i>d</i> , 1) shake	seta <i>f.</i> silk
scuro dark	sete <i>f.</i> thirst; aver ∞ be thirsty
scusa <i>f.</i> excuse	settanta seventy
se if	sette seven
se 3 <i>sg. and pl. disj. refl.</i>	settembre <i>m.</i> September
sebbene <i>conj. w. subj.</i> although	settimana <i>f.</i> week
secolo <i>m.</i> century	settimo seventh
secondo second; <i>prep.</i> according to	sfacciato bold
sedere sit	sgonfio empty, flat, deflated
sedici sixteen	sgridare scold
seggiola <i>f.</i> chair	si 3 <i>sg. and pl. refl. pron.</i>
segno <i>m.</i> sign	si yes; so
segreto <i>m.</i> secret	sia <i>sg. subj. of essere</i>
seguire follow	siamo 1 <i>pl. pres. ind. of essere</i>
seguire follow	siccome as, since
sei six	la Sicilia Sicily
seicento six hundred	sicuro sure
selva <i>f.</i> forest	signora <i>f.</i> lady, married woman, Mrs.
selvaggio wild, savage	signore <i>m.</i> gentleman, sir, Mr.
sembrare seem	signorina <i>f.</i> young lady, unmarried woman, Miss
semplice simple	silenzio <i>m.</i> silence
sempre always	simbolo <i>m.</i> symbol
senatore <i>m.</i> senator	simpatico nice, sympathetic, congenial
Senza <i>f.</i> Seine	sincerità <i>f.</i> sincerity
sentimento <i>m.</i> sentiment	sincero sincere
sentinella <i>f.</i> sentinel	singulto <i>m.</i> sob
sentire feel	sinistro left
senza without	slittare slide
sepolcreto <i>m.</i> cemetery	smarrirsi lose one's way
sera <i>f.</i> evening; buona ∞ good afternoon, good evening	sociale social
serbatoio <i>m.</i> reservoir; penna a ∞ fountain pen	socialista <i>m.</i> socialist
serenamente serenely	sodisfatto satisfied
serio serious; sul ∞ seriously	
serrare lock	

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

sodo hard, solid · cappello ∼ Derby hat	spargere scatter
soffrire suffer	sparire disappear
soggetto <i>adj.</i> subject; <i>m.</i> subject	spasso <i>m.</i> walk; andare a ∼ go to walk
soggezione <i>f.</i> subjection; timidity, embarrassment; avere ∼ be timid, nervous	spaventare frighten
soglia <i>f.</i> threshold	spazzola <i>f.</i> brush
sognare dream	speciale special
sogno <i>m.</i> dream	specie <i>f.</i> kind, sort; far ∼ a surprise
soldato <i>m.</i> soldier	speculatore <i>m.</i> speculator
sole <i>m.</i> sun	spedale <i>m.</i> hospital
solenne solemn	spedire send
solito : per il ∼ usually; come al ∼ as usual	speditamente fluently
solitudine <i>f.</i> solitude	sperare hope
solo single, only (<i>adj.</i>)	spesa <i>f.</i> expense
soltanto only (<i>adv.</i>)	spesso often
somma <i>f.</i> sum	spettacolo <i>m.</i> spectacle
sommo highest, supreme	spezzare destroy, tear to pieces
sonare (110, d) ring, play	spia <i>f.</i> spy
sonnacchiare nap	spicciarsi hasten
sonno <i>m.</i> sleep; avere ∼ be sleepy	spiegare unfold
soprabito <i>m.</i> overcoat	spirito <i>m.</i> spirit
soprattutto above all	sporgersi lean out
sopravvivere survive	sportello <i>m.</i> ticket window, car window
sorbire sip	sta' <i>a sg. imper. of stare</i>
sorella <i>f.</i> sister	stagione <i>f.</i> season; mezza ∼ between seasons
sorellina <i>f.</i> little sister	stamane this morning
sorpresa <i>f.</i> surprise	stampa <i>f.</i> press
sorte <i>f.</i> kind; lot	stancarsi become tired
sortire go out	stanco tired
sostegno <i>m.</i> support	stanotte to-night; last night
sottana <i>f.</i> petticoat, skirt	stanza <i>f.</i> room
sotterraneo underground	stare (166) be, stay; ∼ di casa re-side
sotto under	starnutire sneeze
la Spagna Spain	starò <i>1 sg. fut. ind. of stare</i>
spagnuolo Spanish	stasera this evening; this afternoon
spalla <i>f.</i> shoulder	stato <i>m.</i> state
sparare fire	

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

statuto <i>m.</i> constitution	şvogliato unenthusiastic, unwilling
stazione <i>f.</i> station	şvoltare swerve
Stefano Stephen	
sterzare turn (a vehicle)	tacco <i>m.</i> heel of shoe
stesso same, self; <i>io</i> ∼ I myself	tacere (185; 1 <i>pl. ind. pres. taciamo</i>) be silent
stimare consider	tagliare cut
stivale <i>m.</i> boot	tale such; <i>un</i> ∼ such a
stoffa <i>f.</i> goods	Tamigi Thames
storia <i>f.</i> history, story	tanto , -i, so much, so many
strada <i>f.</i> road; ∼ sotterranea under- ground railway; ∼ facendo on the	tardi late; <i>far</i> ∼ be late
strage <i>f.</i> butchery [way]	tasca <i>f.</i> pocket
straniere <i>m.</i> foreigner, alien	tassa <i>f.</i> tax
straordinario extraordinary	tavola <i>f.</i> table
strapazzo <i>m.</i> abuse	tazza <i>f.</i> cup
strèpito <i>m.</i> noise	tè <i>m.</i> tea
stretto narrow; <i>p. p. of stringere</i>	teatro <i>m.</i> theater
stringa <i>f.</i> shoe-lace	tedesco German
stringere squeeze, press	tela <i>f.</i> linen
strumento <i>m.</i> instrument	telefonare telephone
studiare study	téma <i>m.</i> theme
stúdio <i>m.</i> study	téma <i>f.</i> fear
studioso studious	temere fear
stupefatto amazed	tempo <i>m.</i> time, weather; <i>a</i> ∼ on time; <i>per</i> ∼ early; <i>cól</i> ∼ in time, in the course of time; <i>fa bel</i> ∼ it is fine weather
su, sur (39), on; above	tenere hold
sùbito immediately	terminare terminate
sublime sublime	termosifone <i>m.</i> hot-water furnace
succedere a succeed (<i>tr.</i>)	terra <i>f.</i> earth
succhiare suck	terrazza <i>f.</i> balcony
sugli, sui, sul, sullo, sulla, 75	terribile terrible
suo his, her	território <i>m.</i> territory
suocero <i>m.</i> father-in-law	terzo third
suolo <i>m.</i> soil	tèsa <i>f.</i> hat-brim
superiore upper, superior	tèsta <i>f.</i> head
superiorità <i>f.</i> superiority	Tevere <i>m.</i> Tiber
supplizio <i>m.</i> execution, torture	ti, tè, thee
supremo supreme	tiene 3 <i>sg. ind. pres. of tenere</i>
şvegliare waken	
şventura <i>f.</i> misfortune	
şvizzero Swiss	

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

tingere tinge; tingersi be colored	trēno <i>m.</i> train
tipico typical	trēnta thirty
tirannia <i>f.</i> tyranny	tricolore tri-colored
tiranno <i>m.</i> tyrant	trionfo <i>m.</i> triumph
tirare pull; ∞ vento blow; ∞ via continue	triplice triple
toccare touch; ∞ a concern, be the turn of	triplo triple
tocco <i>m.</i> stroke of bell; al ∞ at one P.M.	tristezza <i>f.</i> sadness
Tommaso Thomas	troppo too, too much
tonare (110, <i>d</i>) thunder	trovare find
tono <i>m.</i> tone, tint	truppe <i>f. pl.</i> troops
tornacento <i>m.</i> advantage	tu thou
tornare return; come out right; ∞ conto (a) be of advantage (to)	tuo thy
torre <i>f.</i> tower	tuono <i>m.</i> thunder
torrente <i>m.</i> torrent	Turco Turk
torto <i>m.</i> wrong; avere ∞ be wrong	tutto all; far di ∞ do everything
la Toscana Tuscany	ubbidire a obey
tossire cough	ubriaco drunk
tovaglia <i>f.</i> tablecloth	uccello <i>m.</i> bird
tra between, among	udire (192) hear
tradimento <i>m.</i> betrayal, treachery	ufficiale <i>m.</i> officer
tradire betray	uguale equal, exactly like
traditore, -tore or -trice , traitor, traitress	ultimo last; ∞ piano top story
tranne except; ∞ che <i>conj. w. subj.</i> except that	umano human
trattare treat; trattarsi di be a question of	un a, one
tratto <i>m.</i> trait; a un ∞ suddenly, all at once	undecimo eleventh
traversare cross	undici eleven
travestire disguise	unico only, unique
tre three	unità <i>f.</i> union
tredecimo thirteenth	unito united
trēdici thirteen	università <i>f.</i> university
tremare tremble	uno (59, <i>b</i>), un , una , a , one
tremendo tremendous	uomo <i>m.</i> (<i>pl.</i> uomini) man
	uopo <i>m.</i> need; è d' ∞, fa d' ∞ , it is necessary
	uovo <i>m.</i> (<i>pl.</i> uova) egg
	urlo <i>m.</i> howl
	urtare hurl
	uscio <i>m.</i> exit, doorway
	uscire (204) go out

ITALIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

uscita <i>f.</i> exit	vettura <i>f.</i> carriage
uva <i>f.</i> grape	vi, vè, <i>adv.</i> = ci; <i>pron.</i> you (<i>dat.</i> and <i>acc.</i>)
va goes; vabbene very well	via <i>adv.</i> off, away; è via dicendo et cetera
vacanza <i>f.</i> vacation	via <i>f.</i> street
vacca <i>f.</i> cow	viaggiare travel
valere (220) be worth; valersi di avail oneself of	viaggiatore <i>m.</i> traveler
valigia <i>f.</i> valise	viaggio <i>m.</i> journey; buon ~ a pleasant journey to you
valle <i>f.</i> valley	vicenda <i>f.</i> turn; a ~ in turn
vampiro <i>m.</i> vampire	vicino <i>m.</i> neighbor; ~ a <i>prep.</i> near
vanno 3 <i>pl. ind. pres. of andare</i>	viene 2 <i>sg. pres. ind. of venire</i>
vasto vast	vile cowardly
vecchio old	villa <i>f.</i> country-place
vede sees	vincere conquer, win
vedere see; non ~ l'ora di not be able to wait to, long to	vinto <i>p.p. of vincere</i>
vedetta <i>f.</i> sentinel	virtù <i>f.</i> virtue, power
vela <i>f.</i> sail; far ~ set sail	visita <i>f.</i> visit; fare una ~ a call upon
vendemmia <i>f.</i> vintage	visitare visit
vendere sell	viso <i>m.</i> face
vendita <i>f.</i> sale	vista <i>f.</i> view; far ~ di make a pretense of
venerdì <i>m.</i> Friday	visto <i>p.p. of vedere</i>
Venezia Venice	vita <i>f.</i> life
veneziano Venetian	vite <i>f.</i> grape-vine
venire (138) come	vittima <i>f.</i> victim
ventaglio <i>m.</i> fan	vittoria <i>f.</i> victory
venti twenty	Vittorio Emanuele Victor Emmanuel
vento <i>m.</i> wind; tirar ~ blow	vittorioso victorious
veramente truly	vivacità <i>f.</i> vivacity
verde green	vivere live, be alive
vergogna <i>f.</i> shame	vivo alive
vergognarsi be ashamed	vogliamo 1 <i>pl. pres. ind. of volere</i>
verità <i>f.</i> truth	voglio 1 <i>sg. pres. ind. of volere</i>
vero true	voi you
verso towards	volante <i>m.</i> steering-wheel
vestiario <i>m.</i> wardrobe; roba da ~ clothing	volentieri gladly, willingly
vestirsi dress oneself	
vestito, vestitino, m. dress	

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

volere (133) wish, will; ∞ bene a
love
volontà *f.* will
volta *f.* time, a time; **una** ∞ once
voltarsi turn (*intr.*)
voluti desired, willed; *p.p.* of vo-
lere

Vossignoria *f.* Your Lordship
voſtro your
vuole 3 *sg. pres. ind.* of **volere**
zia *f.* aunt
zio *m.* uncle
zitto hush

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

a, an, un, uno, una	agree accordarsi
able capace; be ∼ potere	ahead avanti; straight ∼ diritto
aboard a bordo; all ∼ pronti	aim puntare
about <i>prep.</i> intorno a, dintorno a;	air aria <i>f.</i>
<i>adv.</i> circa; be ∼ to star per	alive vivo
absurd assurdo	all tutto; above ∼ soprattutto
abuse strapazzo <i>m.</i>	already già
accept accettare	also anche
accompany accompagnare	alter alterare
according to secondo	always sempre
account bilancio <i>m.</i>	amazed stupefatto
accustom avvezzare, abituare	ambition ambizione <i>f.</i>
ache dolore	America l' Amērica <i>f.</i>
acquaintance conoscenza <i>f.</i>	American americano
acquainted with : be ∼ conoscere	among tra, fra
acquire acquistare	amuse divertire; ∼ oneself divertirsi
act agire	ancient antico, -chi
Adriatic <i>adj.</i> adriatico	and e, ed
advantage vantaggio, tornaconto <i>m.</i> ;	anger cōllera <i>f.</i>
be of ∼ to tornar conto a	annoy dar noia a
advice consiglio <i>m.</i>	annoyance noia <i>f.</i>
adviser consigliere <i>m.</i>	anthology antologia <i>f.</i>
affair affare <i>m.</i>	any <i>adj.</i> alcuno; <i>pron.</i> ne
affectionate affezionato	anything qualunque cosa, ogni cosa
afraid : be ∼ (of) aver paura (di)	apartment appartamento <i>m.</i>
after <i>prep.</i> dopo; <i>conj.</i> dopo che	apiece per uno
afternoon dopopranzo <i>m.</i> ; <i>adj.</i> po-	appear comparire
meridiano; good ∼ buona sera	apple pomo <i>m.</i> ; mela <i>f.</i>
afterward dopo	approach avvicinarsi a
again di nuovo	April aprile <i>m.</i>
against contro, contra	Aristotle Aristōtile
age età <i>f.</i> ; at the ∼ of in età di	arm braccio <i>m.</i>
ago fa, or sono	arms armi <i>f. pl.</i>

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

army esercito <i>m.</i>	battle battaglia <i>f.</i>
arrangement ordinamento <i>m.</i>	be essere
arrive arrivare, giungere, parvenire	beach spiaggia <i>f.</i>
art arte <i>f.</i>	bearings <i>see</i> compass
artist artista <i>c.</i>	beat battere
as siccome; <i>as</i> for in quanto a	beautiful bello
ashamed : be <i>as</i> vergognarsi	beauty bellezza <i>f.</i>
ask (for) domandare (di)	because perché
assemble riunirsi	become diventare, divenire
assume presumere	bed letto <i>m.</i>
at a, ad	bed-room camera (<i>f.</i>) da letto
attention : pay <i>as</i> stare attento	bee ape <i>f.</i>
attentive attento	beetle scarafaggio <i>m.</i>
attract attrarre	before (<i>time</i>) <i>adv.</i> prima; <i>prep.</i> prima di; <i>conj.</i> prima che
August agosto <i>m.</i>	before (<i>place</i>) <i>prep.</i> innanzi a, dinanzi a, davanti a; <i>adv.</i> avanti, innanzi
Augustine Agostino	begin cominciare, principiare
aunt zia <i>f.</i>	beginning principio <i>m.</i>
Austrian austriaco	behind <i>adv.</i> indietro, dietro; <i>prep.</i> dietro a
author autore, scrittore <i>m.</i>	Belgian belga
automobile automobile <i>c.</i>	Belgium il Belgio
autumn autunno <i>m.</i>	believe credere
avail oneself (of) valersi (di)	belong appartenere
avoid evitare	below <i>prep.</i> sotto; <i>adv.</i> abbasso
await attendere, aspettare	benefit beneficio <i>m.</i>
away via	best <i>adj.</i> il migliore; <i>adv.</i> il meglio; do one's <i>as</i> fare di tutto, fare il possibile
baby bimbo, -a	betray tradire
back dosso <i>m.</i> ; at the <i>as</i> of in fondo a; on the <i>as</i> of addosso a	better <i>adj.</i> migliore; <i>adv.</i> meglio
bad cattivo; too <i>as</i> ! peccato!	between fra
badly male	beyond <i>prep.</i> al di là di, di là da, oltre
bag sacco <i>m.</i> , borsa <i>f.</i>	big grosso
baggage bagaglio <i>m.</i> ; <i>as</i> room bagagliaio, deposito <i>m.</i>	bill conto <i>m.</i>
baker fornaio <i>m.</i>	bird uccello <i>m.</i>
balcony terrazza <i>f.</i>	birthday giorno natale, compleanno <i>m.</i>
ball palla <i>f.</i>	
band banda <i>f.</i>	
basket panier <i>m.</i>	
bath bagno <i>m.</i>	

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

black nêro	burn ârdere, bruciare
blame colpa <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> biasmare, dare addosso a	but ma
blind cieco	butchery strage <i>f.</i>
blood sangue <i>m.</i>	butter burro <i>m.</i>
bloom fiorire; in ∞ fiorito	buy comprare
blotter cartasuga, cartasugante <i>f.</i>	by da; (beside) accanto a
blow tirar vento; ∞ up saltare in aria	café caffè <i>m.</i>
blue azzurro, celeste	cake pasta <i>f.</i>
board, boarding-house, boarding-school, pensione <i>f.</i>	call chiamare; ∞ on far visita a; be called chiamarsi
boat barca <i>f.</i>	can, be able, potêre
boil bollire	cane bastone <i>m.</i> (<i>dim.</i> bastoncêllo)
bold ardito	cannon cannone <i>m.</i>
book libro <i>m.</i>	caress carezza <i>f.</i>
bookseller libraio <i>m.</i>	carnation garôfano <i>m.</i>
boot stivale <i>m.</i> ; ∞ black lustra-scarpe <i>m.</i>	carriage carrozza, vettura <i>f.</i> , legno <i>m.</i>
born nato; be ∞ nascere	carry portare
both tutt'e due, entrambi	case caso <i>m.</i> ; in any ∞ in ogni caso
bottom fondo <i>m.</i> ; at the ∞ of in fondo a	cash : in ∞ a contanti
boundary confine <i>m.</i>	castle castello <i>m.</i>
bouquet mazzolino <i>m.</i>	cathedral duomo <i>m.</i> , cattedrale <i>f.</i>
Bourbon Borbone <i>m.</i>	cease cessare [cimitero <i>m.</i>
box scatola <i>f.</i>	cemetery sepolceto, campo santo,
boy ragazzo <i>m.</i>	central centrale
brain cervello <i>m.</i>	century secolo <i>m.</i>
breach breccia <i>f.</i>	ceremony : stand on ∞ far complimenti
bread pane <i>m.</i>	chair seggiola <i>f.</i>
break rompere	change mutare, cambiare; ∞ one's mind mutar di pensiero; <i>n.</i> (money) resto <i>m.</i>
breast petto <i>m.</i>	chapter capitolo <i>m.</i>
bridge ponte <i>m.</i>	charcoal-burner carbonaro <i>m.</i>
brim (hat-) tesa <i>f.</i>	Charles Carlo
bring portare	chase cacciare
Britannic britannico	chat chiacchierare
brother fratello <i>m.</i>	cheek guancia <i>f.</i>
brother-in-law cognato <i>m.</i>	child fanciullo, -a, bambino, -a
brush spazzola <i>f.</i>	chocolate cioccolata <i>f.</i>
bunch mazzolino <i>m.</i>	

AN. ITALIAN GRAMMAR

choose scëgliere	congenial simpático
Christian cristiano	connecting comunicante
Christmas Natale <i>m.</i> ; Merry ~	conqueror conquistatore <i>m.</i>
Buon Natale	consciousness coscienza <i>f.</i>
Christopher Cristòforo	consist (of) consistere (in)
church chiesa <i>f.</i>	constitution statuto <i>m.</i>
citizen cittadino <i>m.</i>	consul cōnsole <i>m.</i>
city città <i>f.</i>	continue continuare
civilization civiltà <i>f.</i>	contrary contrario; on the ~ in- vece
civilized civile	convenient cōmodo
clap (one's hands) bättere (le mani)	conversation conversazione <i>f.</i>
Clara Chiara	cook cuoco <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> cuocere, fare la cucina
class classe <i>f.</i>	cookery cucina <i>f.</i>
classic clässico	copper rame <i>m.</i>
close chiüdere	corner ängolo <i>m.</i> ; be at the ~ of far ängolo cōn
coast cōsta <i>f.</i>	corporal caporale <i>m.</i>
coffee caffè <i>m.</i>	correct corrìgere
coin moneta <i>f.</i>	correspond corrispōndere
cold frëddo; be ~ aver frëddo; it is ~ fa frëddo; catch ~ prëndere un raffreddore	cost costare
collar collare <i>m.</i> ; coat ~ bāvero <i>m.</i>	cotton cotone <i>m.</i>
college (of <i>University</i>) facoltà <i>f.</i>	cough tossire
color colore <i>m.</i> ; be colored tingersi	count cōnte <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> contare
Columbus Colombo	countess contessa <i>f.</i>
come venire	country (<i>rural</i>) campagna <i>f.</i> ; (<i>polit.</i>) paese <i>m.</i> ; (<i>fatherland</i>) pättria <i>f.</i> ,
comfortable cōmodo; make oneself ~ accomodarsi	couple cōppia <i>f.</i>
command comandare, ordinare	courage coraggio <i>m.</i>
commence cominciare	course corsa <i>f.</i> ; of ~ naturalmente
communicate comunicare	cousin cugino, -a
companion compagno, -a	cover coprire
compartment scompartimento <i>m.</i>	cow vacca <i>f.</i>
compass büssola <i>f.</i>	cowardly vile
complain lagnarsi	crane gru <i>c.</i>
compliment complimento <i>m.</i>	criminal scellerato
condition condizione <i>f.</i> ; on ~ that a patto chë (<i>v. subj.</i>)	crusade crociata <i>f.</i>
conduct condurre	cry grido <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> gridare
conductor guärdia <i>f.</i>	cup tazza <i>f.</i>

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

cut tagliare	direct dirigere
Cyrus Ciro	direction direzione
	disagreeable sgradèvole
daily quotidiano	disappear sparire
dairy cascina <i>f.</i>	discover scoprire
damage danno <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> dannare	disembarkation sbarco <i>m.</i>
danger pericolo <i>m.</i>	disguise travestire
dangerous pericoloso	dish piatto <i>m.</i>
dark buio <i>m.</i> ; <i>adj.</i> scuro	displease dispiacere <i>a</i>
daughter figlia <i>f.</i>	distant lontano, discosto
daughter-in-law nuora <i>f.</i>	disturb disturbare
dawn alba <i>f.</i>	divide dividere
day giorno <i>m.</i> ; period of a ~ giorno	do fare ; <i>aux.</i> do, b, i ; how do you ~?
nata f. ; ~ by ~ giorno a giorno;	come sta?
by the ~ a giornata; by ~ di	dog cane <i>m.</i>
giorno	domestic domestico
daybreak : at ~ sul far del giorno	done fatto
dead morto	door porta <i>f.</i>
dear caro	double doppio
death morte <i>f.</i>	doubt dubbio <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> dubitare
deceit inganno <i>m.</i>	down giù; ~ there laggiù, costaggiù;
December dicembre <i>m.</i>	~ town al centro; ~ stairs abbasso
declare dichiarare	dozen dozzina <i>f.</i>
defeat sconfitta <i>f.</i>	dramatic drammatico
defend difendere	dream sogno <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> sognare
defense difesa <i>f.</i>	dress vestito <i>m.</i> ; ~ oneself vestirsi
degenerate degenerare	dressmaker sarta <i>f.</i>
demand richiedere	drive condurre; ~ out cacciare
depart partire	drunk ubriaco [ducatò <i>m.</i>
depress deprimere	duchy ducato <i>m.</i> ; grand ~ gran-
descend scendere	duke duca <i>m.</i>
desire desiderio <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> desiderare	dumpling gnocco <i>m.</i>
desired voluto	duty dovere <i>m.</i>
dessert dolce <i>m.</i>	dwell abitare, dimorare
dialogue dialogo <i>m.</i>	
die morire	each ciascuno
difficult difficile	ear orecchio <i>m.</i>
dine desinare, pranzare	early per tempo
dining-room sala <i>f.</i> da pranzo	earth terra <i>f.</i>
dint : by ~ of a forza di	east levante <i>m.</i>

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

Easter Pasqua <i>f.</i>	ever mai
eastern orientale	every ogni
easy facile	everybody ognuno, tutti
echo eco <i>c.</i>	everything tutto
effect effettuare	everywhere dappertutto
egg uovo <i>m.</i>	evil male <i>m.</i>
eight otto	except tranne
eighteen diciotto	excursion gita <i>f.</i>
eighteenth decimo ottavo	excuse scusare
eighth ottavo	execution supplizio <i>m.</i>
eighty ottanta	executioner boia <i>m.</i>
elbow gomito <i>m.</i>	exercise-book quaderno <i>m.</i>
elder maggiore	exile esilio <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> esiliare
elect eleggere	exit uscita <i>f.</i>
elegant elegante	expense spesa <i>f.</i>
eleven undici	expose esporre
eleventh undicesimo	express esprimere
elm olmo <i>m.</i>	
embrace abbracciare	face faccia <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> far fronte a; on
emperor imperatore <i>m.</i>	one's \sim bocconi
empire impero <i>m.</i>	fact ; in \sim infatti
end fine <i>f.</i> ; <u>at the \sim of</u> in fondo a	fail fallire [tempo
endow dotare	fair bello; it is \sim weather fa bel
enemy nemico <i>m.</i>	faith fede <i>f.</i>
England l'Inghilterra <i>f.</i>	falcon falco <i>m.</i>
English inglese	fall cadere; \sim upon avventarsi su
enough assai, bastante; be \sim bastare	family famiglia <i>f.</i>
enter entrare	famous famoso, rinomato
entrance entrata <i>f.</i>	fan ventaglio <i>m.</i>
enumerate annoverare	fat grasso
envelope busta <i>f.</i>	father padre <i>m.</i>
equal uguale	father-in-law suocero <i>m.</i>
era era <i>f.</i>	fatigue fatica <i>f.</i>
establish stabilire, istituire	fault colpa <i>f.</i>
et cetera e così in seguito, e via	favor favore <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> favorire
dicendo	fear paura <i>f.</i> , timore <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> aver
Etruscan etrusco	paura, temere
even <i>adj.</i> pari; <i>adv.</i> pure; not \sim	February febbraio <i>m.</i>
neppure	feel sentire
evening sera <i>f.</i> ; good \sim buona sera	felt feltro <i>m.</i>

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

festival festa <i>f.</i>	four quattro; on all ~s carponi
few pochi, -e	fourteen quattordici
fidelity fedeltà <i>f.</i>	fourteenth decimoquarto
fifteen quindici	fourth quarto
fifteenth quindiciesimo	franc lira <i>f.</i>
fifth quinto	France la Frància
fifty cinquanta	Francis Francesco
fig fico <i>m.</i>	free libero
fight combattere	freeze gelare
figure figurare	French francese
finally finalmente	Frenchman Francese <i>m.</i>
find trovare	friar frate <i>m.</i>
fine bello; fino	Friday venerdì <i>m.</i>
finger dito <i>m.</i>	friend amico, -a
finish finire, terminare	from da; (<i>time</i>) fin da
fire fuoco <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> sparare; set on ~ dar fuoco a	front fronte <i>f.</i> ; in ~ of davanti a
first primo	frugal frugale
fitting prqva <i>f.</i>	fruit frutto <i>m.</i>
five cinque	fulfill avverare
flag bandiera <i>f.</i>	full pieno
flee fuggire	
Florence Firenze	garden giardino <i>m.</i>
Florentine fiorentino	gather cōgliere
flower fiore <i>m.</i>	general <i>adj.</i> generale; <i>n.</i> generale <i>m.</i>
fluently speditamente	generally generalmente
fog nebbia <i>f.</i>	genius genio <i>m.</i>
folk gente <i>f.</i>	gentle mite
follow seguire, seguitare	gentleman signore <i>m.</i>
foot piede <i>m.</i> ; on ~ a piedi	George Giorgio
footstool panchetto <i>m.</i>	German tedesco
for per; (<i>time</i>) da; as ~ in quanto a	Germany l'Alemagna, la Germania <i>f.</i>
force forza <i>f.</i>	get ottenere; ~ back riavere; ~ up levarsi
forced forzato	girl ragazza <i>f.</i> ; little ~ bambina <i>f.</i>
foreign straniere <i>m.</i>	give dare; ~ up rinunciare a
foreigner forestiere, straniere <i>m.</i>	glad contento, felice
forest foresta <i>f.</i>	glass bicchiere <i>m.</i> ; (<i>ware</i>) vetro <i>m.</i>
forget dimenticare	glimpse intravedere
fork forchetta <i>f.</i>	glory gloria <i>f.</i>
forty quaranta	glove guanto <i>m.</i>

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

glover guantaio *m.*

go andare; ∞ out andar fuori; ∞ up salire; ∞ in entrare; ∞ away partire; ∞ down scendere

god dio *m.*

God Iddio *m.*

gold oro *m.*

gondola g ndola *f.*

gone partito

good buono; ∞ morning buon giorno

good-by (*polite*) a rivederla, (*fam.*) addio

goodness bont  *f.*

goods stoffa *f.*; dry ∞ merceria *f.*

govern governare

government governo *m.*

grammar gramm tica *f.*

grandfather nonno *m.*

grandmother nonna *f.*

grape uva *f.*

grape-vine vite *f.*

gray grigio

great grande

Greek greco

green verde

greet salutare

greeting saluto *m.*

ground suolo *m.*

group gruppo *m.*

grow crescere

guard guardia *f.*

guess indovinare; ∞ right darsi dentro

guide guida *f.*

gun schioppo *m.*

Hague: The ∞ l'Aia

hair capello *m.*

half *adj.* mezzo; *n.* met  *f.*

hall sala *f.*

hand mano *f.*; within reach of one's ∞

a portata di mano; by ∞ a mano;

at second ∞ di seconda mano

handkerchief fazzoletto *m.*

handsome bello

handy: come ∞ far comodo

hang impiccare

happen accadere, succedere

happy felice; ∞ New Year buon fine e principio d'anno

hard duro, difficile

hardly appena

hasten spicciarsi

hat cappello *m.*

have avere; ∞ to avere da

hawk falco *m.*

he egli, esso

head testa *f.*, capo *m.*; with bowed ∞ a capo chino

health salute *f.*

hear sentire, udire

heart cuore *m.*; by ∞ a mente; take it to ∞ prendersela

heart-broken afflitto

heat calore *m.*

heavy pesante

heed dar retta a

heel (*of shoe*) tacco *m.*; (*of foot*) calcagno *m.*

help aiuto *m.*; *v.* aiutare; not be able to ∞ non poter a meno di

hen gallina *f.*

henceforth di qui innanzi, oramai

Henry Enrico

her *pron.* la, le; *poss.* il suo *etc.*

here qui, qua; ∞ is, ∞ are, ecco, c' , ci sono

heritage retaggio *m.*

hero eroe *m.*

heroic eroico

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

herself lei stessa; (<i>refl.</i>) si	if se
hesitate esitare	ignorant ignorante
high alto	ill ammalato; fall ∞ ammalare
highness altezza <i>f.</i>	imagine immaginare, figurarsi
him gli, lui, lo	immediately subito
himself lui stesso; (<i>refl.</i>) si	impervious impervio
his il suo, la sua, <i>etc.</i>	important : be ∞ importare
history storia <i>f.</i>	impose imporre
hold tenere	imprudent imprudente
holiday festa <i>f.</i>	in in; (<i>time</i>) fra
home : at ∞ da noi; in casa	increase accrescere
homeward a casa	indeed davvero
honor onorare	independence indipendenza <i>f.</i>
hook gancio <i>m.</i>	inexhaustible inesauribile
hope speranza <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> sperare	inferior inferiore
horse cavallo <i>m.</i>	ingrate ingrato <i>m.</i>
horseback : ride ∞ andar a cavallo	ink inchiostro <i>m.</i>
hospital ospedale <i>m.</i>	inside (of) dentro (a)
hostile inimico	instead (of) invece (di)
hot caldo; it is ∞ fa caldo	instrument strumento <i>m.</i>
hotel albergo <i>m.</i>	intelligent intelligente
hour ora <i>f.</i>	into in
house casa <i>f.</i> ; at the ∞ of da	introduce presentare
how come; ∞ do you do? come sta?	iron ferro <i>m.</i>
∞ much, ∞ many, quanto, -i	island isola <i>f.</i>
however <i>conj.</i> però, pure; <i>adv.</i> per quanto	it esso, lo
human umano	Italian italiano
hundred cento	Italy l' Italia <i>f.</i>
hunger fame <i>f.</i>	jacket giacchetta <i>f.</i>
hungry : be ∞ aver fame	January gennaio <i>m.</i>
hunt cacciare	Japan il Giappone
hurl lanciare	jewel gioiello <i>m.</i>
hurry fretta <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> spicciarsi; be in	John Giovanni
a ∞ aver fretta, aver fùria	Joseph Giuseppe
husband marito <i>m.</i>	journey viaggio <i>m.</i>
I io	joy gioia <i>f.</i>
ice ghiaccio <i>m.</i>	joyful allegro
ice-cream gelato <i>m.</i>	Julius Cæsar Giulio Cesare
	July luglio <i>m.</i>

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

June giugno <i>m.</i>	least minimo; at ~ almeno
just giusto; ~ now or ora	leather cuoio <i>m.</i>
kilogram chilogramma <i>m.</i>	leave <i>tr.</i> lasciare; <i>intr.</i> partire; <i>n.</i> licenza <i>f.</i>
kind genere <i>m.</i> , specie, sorte <i>f.</i> ; <i>adj.</i> buono, cortese	left sinistro
king re <i>m.</i>	Leghorn Livorno
kingdom regno <i>m.</i>	lemon limone <i>m.</i>
kiss bacio <i>m.</i>	length lunghezza <i>f.</i>
kitchen cucina <i>f.</i>	less meno
knee ginocchio <i>m.</i> ; on one's ~s ginocchi	lessen diminuire
knife coltello <i>m.</i>	lesson lezione <i>f.</i>
know sapere, conoscere	let (<i>allow</i>) lasciare; <i>cf.</i> § 92, a
label cartellino <i>m.</i>	letter lettera <i>f.</i>
laborious laborioso	liberty libertà <i>f.</i>
lacking : be ~ mancare	lie giacere; mentire
ladder scala a pioli	life vita <i>f.</i>
lady signora <i>f.</i> ; young ~ signorina <i>f.</i>	light luce <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> accendere; <i>adj.</i> chiaro, leggiere
lake lago <i>m.</i>	lighten balenare, lampeggiare
lamp lume <i>m.</i>	like simile; should ~ vorrei <i>etc.</i>
land sbarcare	lily-of-the-valley mugheretto <i>m.</i>
language lingua <i>f.</i>	linen lino <i>m.</i> ; tela <i>f.</i>
large grande	lining fodera <i>f.</i>
lark allodola <i>f.</i>	lip labbro <i>m.</i>
last forma <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> durare; <i>adj.</i> ultimo, (<i>past</i>) scorso; at ~ alla fine	lira <i>f.</i> lira (twenty cents)
late tardi; the ~ il fu; be ~ far tardi	listen (to) ascoltare
laugh riso <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> ridere	literature letteratura <i>f.</i>
law legge <i>f.</i>	little poco; ~ by ~ poco a poco; too ~ meno; <i>adj.</i> piccolo
lawsuit lite <i>f.</i>	live vivere; (<i>dwelt</i>) abitare, dimorare, star di casa
lawyer avvocato <i>m.</i>	load carica <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> caricare
lay posare; ~ the cloth mettere la tovaglia	loaded carico
layman laico <i>m.</i>	lock serratura <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> serrare
leaf foglia <i>f.</i>	London Londra
lean out sporgersi	long lungo; ~ to non veder l'ora di; as ~ as tantochè, finchè
learn imparare; ~ of sapere	look, look at , guardare; ~ for cercare
learned dotto	lordship : your ~ Vossignoria <i>f.</i>

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

lose pērdere
 lot sorte *f.*
 Louis Luigi
 love amore *m.*; *v.* amare
 low *adj.* basso; *v.* muggire
 lower inferiore
 luck: good ∼ fortuna *f.*
 luckily meno male
 luggage bagāgio *m.*
 lunch colazione *f.*; take ∼ far
 colazione

Madam Signōra *f.*
mail posta *f.*; *v.* impostare
mainspring molla *f.*
majesty maestà *f.*
majority maggior parte *f.*
make fare
mamma mamma, mammina *f.*
man uomo *m.*; honorable ∼ galan-
 tuomo *m.*
manner maniera *f.*
many molti
march marcia *f.*
March marzo *m.*
married woman signōra *f.*
martyr märtire *m.*
mask mäschera *f.*
mass messa *f.*
mast älbero *m.*
match fiammifero *m.*; *v.* accompa-
 gnare
matter materia *f.*; *v.* importare
may, can, potēre
May maggio *m.*
me mi, me
meadow prato *m.*
meat carne *f.*
meet incontrare; conōscere
memory memōria *f.*

merchant mercante *m.*
metal metallo *m.*
metropolis metrōpoli *f.*
middle mezzo *m.*; in the ∼ of in
 mezzo a
midnight mezzanotte *f.*
might potēre *etc.*; *or subj.*
mild mite
military militare
milk latte *m.*
milliner modista *f.*
mind mente *f.*
mine miniēra *f.*; il mio *etc.*
minute minuto *m.*
miser avaro *m.*
misfortune sventura, disgrazia *f.*
miss sentire la mancanza di
Miss Signorina *f.*
mistake sbaglio *m.*; *v.* sbagliare
modern moderno
moment momento *m.*; in a ∼ a mo-
 menti
monarch monarca *m.*
monarchist monārchico *m.*
Monday lunedì *m.*
money denaro *m.*
monk mōnaco *m.*
monster mostro *m.*
month mese *m.*
moon luna *f.*
more più
morning mattina *f.*; good ∼ buon giōr-
 no; say good ∼ dare il buon giōrno
most il più
mother madre *f.*
mother-in-law suōcera *f.*
mount salire, montare
mountain montagna *f.*
mourning lutto *m.*; in ∼ a lutto
move muōvere

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

movement mōto <i>m.</i>	niece nipōte <i>f.</i>
Mr. Signōre <i>m.</i>	night nōtte <i>f.</i>
Mrs. Signōra <i>f.</i>	nine nōve
much mōlto; <i>as</i> ∼ <i>more</i> altrettanto	nineteen diciannōve
mud fango <i>m.</i>	nineteenth dēcimo nōno
murmur mormorare	ninety novanta
mushroom fungo <i>m.</i>	ninth nōno
my il mio, la mia, <i>etc.</i>	no nō; ∼ <i>one</i> nessuno; (<i>not any</i>)
myself io stēssō; <i>refl.</i> mi	nōn (<i>preceding vb.</i>)
name nōme <i>m.</i>	noise rumōre, strēpito <i>m.</i>
nap sonnacchiare	none nessuno
Naples Nāpoli	noon mezzogiorno <i>m.</i>
narrow strēto	nor nē
nation nazione <i>f.</i>	north tramontana <i>f.</i> , nōrte <i>m.</i>
navy marina <i>f.</i>	northern settentrionale
near vicino (<i>a</i>)	not nōn
necessary necessārio; <i>be</i> ∼ <i>bi</i> so-	nothing niēte, nulla
gnare, occōrrere	notice avviso <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> accōrgersi (<i>di</i>)
neck cōllo <i>m.</i>	notwithstanding (<i>that</i>) nonostante
necklace collana <i>f.</i>	(<i>chē</i>) (<i>conj. w. subj.</i>)
necktie cravatta, ciarpētta <i>f.</i>	novel romanzo <i>m.</i>
need biōgno <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> avēre biōgno <i>di</i>	November novēmbre <i>m.</i>
neigh nitrire	now ōra, adēssō
neighbor vicino <i>m.</i>	nowadays al giorno <i>di</i> ōggi, ōggidi
neither nē; ∼ . . . <i>nor</i> nē . . . nē	number nūmero <i>m.</i>
nephew nipōte <i>m.</i>	nut nōce <i>f.</i>
nest nido <i>m.</i>	oak quērcia <i>f.</i>
never nōn . . . mai	oar rēmo <i>m.</i>
nevertheless tuttavia	observe osservare
new nuōvo; New Year's capo d'an-	obstinate s̄vogliato
no; Happy New Year buōn capo	occur avēre luōgo
d'anno; to wish a happy new year	occurrence eveniēza <i>f.</i>
augurare il buōn anno	o'clock : at six ∼ alle sēi
news notizie <i>f. pl.</i>	October ottōbre <i>m.</i>
newspaper giornale <i>m.</i>	of di
next (<i>near</i>) accanto a; (<i>coming</i>)	off lungi, via [sela a male
prōssimo, quēst' altro; ∼ <i>door</i>	offend offēndere; be offēnded avē-
accanto	offer offrire
nice simpātico	officer ufficiale <i>m.</i>

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

- often** spesso
old vëçchio; **grow** ~ invecchiare
on su, sur
once una vqlta; **at** ~ sũbito
one un, uno, -a
only *adj.* sũlo, ũnico; *adv.* soltanto;
 but, only (*w. acc.*), nõn . . . chę
open *adj.* apęrto; *v.* aprire
opportunity occasione *f.*
opposite in faccia a, dirimpętto a
 or o, ęd
orange arancia *f.*
orange-tree arancio *m.*
order ęrdine *m.*; *v.* ordinare; **to** ~
 su mişura
other altro
ought dovęri *etc.*
our il nõstro, la nõstra, *etc.*
ourselves noi stęssi; (*refl.*) ci
out fuęri; **go** ~ andar fuęri
outside (of) all' infuęri (di)
over su, sopra
overcoat soprąbito *m.*
owe dovęre
own *adj.* pręprio; *v.* possedere

package pacco *m.*
page pągina *f.*
pain dolęre *m.*; *v.* dolęre
pair paio (*pl.* paia) *m.*
palace palazzo *m.*
papa babbo *m.*
paper carta *f.*; **news** ~ giornale *m.*
parents genitęri *m. pl.*
Paris Parigi
parish-priest pąrroco *m.*
parlor salętto *m.*
part parte *f.*
pass passare
passenger passagęero, viaggiatęore *m.*

patience pazienza *f.*
patriot patrięta *m.*
pattern figurino *m.*
Paul Pąolo
pay, ~ for, pagare
peace pace *f.*
peach pęsca *f.*
pear pęra *f.*
peasant contadino, -a [serbatęio
pen pęnna *f.*; **fountain** ~ pęnna a
pencil lapis *m.*
people pępọlo *m.*; gente *f.*
perceive accęrgersi (di)
perhaps forse
permit permęttre
persecute perseguitare
person pęrsona *f.*
Petrarch Petrarca
Philip Filippo
philosophical filęsęfico
photograph fotografia *f.*
physician mędico *m.*
pianist pianista *c.*
picture quadro *m.*
piece pęzzo *m.*; (*money*) monęta *f.*;
 tear to ~ far a brani; **by the** ~ a
 cęttimę
Piedmont il Piemonte
Piedmontese piemontęse
pilgrim pellegrino *m.*
pilgrimage: **go on** ~ peregrinare
pin spillo *m.*; *v.* appuntare
pity pietą *f.*; **what a** ~ peccato!
place luęgo, pęsto *m.*; (*at table*)
 posata *f.*; *v.* pęrre
plant pianta *f.*
plate piatto *m.*
play giocare; (*an instrument*) sonare
please pęr piacęre, pęr favęre;
 v. piacęre a

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

pleasure piacere <i>m.</i> ; do a ~ to far piacere a	princess principessa <i>f.</i>
pleat piega <i>f.</i>	prison prigione <i>f.</i> , carcere <i>m.</i>
pocket tasca <i>f.</i>	problem problema <i>m.</i>
poet poeta <i>m.</i>	professor professore <i>m.</i>
point punta <i>f.</i>	promise promessa <i>f.</i>
polish lustrare	property proprietà <i>f.</i>
polite educato	proprietor padrone <i>m.</i>
political politico	provided that purchè (<i>w. subj.</i>)
politician politico <i>m.</i>	prudent prudente
politics politica <i>f.</i>	punish punire
poor povero	pupil scolare <i>m.</i>
port porto <i>m.</i>	purchase compra <i>f.</i>
porter facchino <i>m.</i>	purpose scopo <i>m.</i> ; on ~ a posta
portrait ritratto <i>m.</i>	purrr far le fusa
possess possedere; ~ oneself of agguantare	purse borsa <i>f.</i>
post posta <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> impostare	put, put on, mettere
postage-stamp francobollo <i>m.</i>	queen regina <i>f.</i>
postal postale	question domanda <i>f.</i> ; be a ~ of trattarsi di
post-card cartolina (<i>f.</i>) postale	quiet quieto, tranquillo
postman postino <i>m.</i>	
poverty povertà <i>f.</i>	rain pioggia <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> piovere
powder polvere <i>f.</i>	raincoat impermeabile <i>m.</i>
power potere <i>m.</i>	raise levare, alzare, innalzare
practice pratica <i>f.</i>	rather piuttosto
praise lodare	read leggere
pray <i>v.</i> pregare; <i>adv.</i> pure	ready pronto; ~-made bell' e fatto
precious prezioso	really veramente
prefer preferire	reason ragione <i>f.</i>
prepare preparare	rebuild rifare
president presidente <i>m.</i>	receipts incasso <i>m.</i>
press stampa <i>f.</i>	receive ricevere
pretense finzione <i>f.</i> ; make ~ of far vista di	recently di recente
pretty carino, grazioso	recommend raccomandare
prevail prevalere	recover <i>tr.</i> riavere; <i>intr.</i> guarire
prevent impedire	recruit recluta <i>f.</i>
primitive primitivo	red rosso
prince principe <i>m.</i>	redeem redimere
	reef scoglio <i>m.</i>

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

- refuge** rifugio *m.*; **take** ∞ rifugiarsi
refuse rifiutare
regard (*greeting of remembrance*)
 saluto *m.*
regret deplorare, rincrescere *a*, dis-
 piacere *a*; **I** ∞ mi rincresce
relative parente *m.*; *adj.* relativo
remain rimanere
remainder resto *m.*
remake rifare
remember ricordarsi *di*
renounce rinunciare *a*
repeat ripetere
repent pentirsi
reply risposta *f.*; *v.* rispondere
reproof rimprovero *m.*
reprove rimproverare
republic repubblica *f.*
republican repubblicano
respectable rispettabile
rest resto, riposo *m.*; *v.* riposarsi
result risultato *m.*
resurrection risorgimento *m.*
return ritorno *m.*; *v.* tornare, ritor-
 nare
Rhine Reno *m.*
ribbon nastro *m.*
rich ricco *m.*
rid oneself sbarazzarsi
right destro; **be** ∞ aver ragione
rigorous rigoroso
ring anello *m.*; *v.* sonare
rise levarsi, alzarsi
risk rischio *m.*
river fiume *m.*
road strada *f.*
Roman romano
Rome Roma
room stanza *f.*; posto *m.*
roost appollaiarsi
rose rosa *f.*
rough rozzo
row-boat barca (*f.*) a remi
rule regola *f.*; *v.* reggere
ruler regnante *m.*
run corsa *f.*; *v.* correre; ∞ down
adj. scario
sad triste
sadness tristezza *f.*
safe sicuro
safety sicurezza, salvezza *f.*; in ∞
 in salvo
sail vela *f.*; **set** ∞ far vela
sailor marinaio *m.*
saint santo *m.*
Saint san, santo
saintly santo
saint's-day onomastico *m.*
sale vendita *f.*
same stesso
sample campione *m.*
Saturday sabato *m.*
saucer piattino (*m.*) da tazza
savage selvaggio *adj.*
save *v.* salvare, (*money*) risparmiare;
prep. tranne
Savoy la Savoia *f.*
say dire
says dice
scatter spargere, diffondere
school scuola *f.*
scissors forbici *f. pl.*
scold sgridare
score ventina *f.*
scout vedetta *f.*
scrap brano *m.*
sea mare *m.*; **at** ∞ in mare; **by the** ∞
 al mare
season stagione *f.*

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

second secondo	should <i>past fut. or subj.</i>
secret segreto <i>m.</i>	shoulder spalla <i>f.</i>
secretly di nascosto	shout grido <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> gridare
see vedere	show mostrare, dimostrare; ∞ in far passare
seem sembrare	Sicily la Sicilia
seen visto	side parte <i>f.</i> ; on this ∞ of al di qua di; on that ∞ of al di là di
Seine Senna <i>f.</i>	sign affisso, cartello <i>m.</i> ; segno <i>m.</i>
seldom di rado	signal cenno <i>m.</i>
self <i>see myself, himself, etc.</i>	silence silenzio <i>m.</i>
sell vendere	silk seta <i>f.</i>
send mandare, inviare, spedire	silver argento <i>m.</i>
sentinel sentinella, vedetta <i>f.</i>	simple semplice
September settembre <i>m.</i>	since (<i>time</i>) dacché; (<i>cause</i>) poichè
seriously sul serio	sincere sincero
servant servo, -a	sing cantare
serve servire; (<i>meal</i>) imbandire	sip sorbire
service servizio <i>m.</i>	sir Signore <i>m.</i>
set table apparecchiare	sister sorella <i>f.</i>
seven sette	sister-in-law cognata <i>f.</i>
seventeen diciassette	sit sedere; ∞ down accomodarsi
seventeenth decimo settimo	six sei
seventh settimo	sixteen sedici
seventy settanta	sixteenth decimo sesto
several parecchi	sixth sesto
sew cucire	sixty sessanta
shake scuotere; ∞ hands with dar la mano a	skirt sottana <i>f.</i>
shall I (<i>in questions</i>) devo	sleep sonno <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> dormire
shame vergogna <i>f.</i>	sleepy : be ∞ aver sonno
share parte <i>f.</i>	sleeve manica <i>f.</i>
she ella, essa; lei	small piccolo
sheep pecora <i>f.</i>	smoke fumo <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> fumare
sheet lenzuolo; (<i>of paper</i>) foglio <i>m.</i>	sneeze starnutare
shelf scaffale <i>m.</i>	snow neve <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> nevicare
shield scudo <i>m.</i>	so così; ∞ much, ∞ many, tanto, tanti; ∞ that perchè (<i>w. subj.</i>)
shoe scarpa <i>f.</i>	sob singulto <i>m.</i>
shoemaker calzolaio <i>m.</i>	socialist socialista <i>m.</i>
shoot tirare	sock calzino <i>m.</i>
shop bottega <i>f.</i>	
short corto, breve	

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

soft dolce	station stazione <i>f.</i>
softly piano	stay restare, rimanere
soil suolo <i>m.</i>	steel acciaio <i>m.</i>
soldier soldato <i>m.</i>	step passo <i>m.</i>
solitude solitudine <i>f.</i>	Stephen Stéfano
some <i>adj.</i> qualche; <i>pron.</i> ne	still ancora, tuttavia
son figlio <i>m.</i>	stone pietra <i>f.</i>
son-in-law gēnero <i>m.</i>	stop fermarsi
song canzone <i>f.</i>	story storia <i>f.</i> ; (<i>of a house</i>) piano
soon presto, tosto; <i>as</i> ~ <i>as</i> tosto che; <i>as</i> ~ <i>as</i> possible quanto prima; <i>no</i> <i>sooner</i> . . . <i>than</i> appena . . . che	straight dritto; ~ <i>ahead</i> difilato
sorrow dolore <i>m.</i>	strange strano
sorrowful afflitto, doloroso	stranger straniero <i>m.</i>
sorry dispiacente; <i>be</i> ~ dispiacere <i>a</i> ; <i>I am</i> ~ mi dispiace	straw paglia <i>f.</i>
south mezzogiorno	street via <i>f.</i>
southern meridionale	stretch out pōrgere
Spaniard Spagnuolo <i>m.</i>	strike sciōpero <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> colpire
Spanish spagnuolo	struggle lotta <i>f.</i>
spark scintilla <i>f.</i>	study stūdio <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> studiare
speak parlare	succeed riuscire; <i>tr.</i> succēdere <i>a</i>
spectacle spettācolo <i>m.</i>	suck succhiare
spectacles occhiali <i>m. pl.</i>	suddenly improvvisamente, a un tratto
speculator speculatore <i>m.</i>	suffer soffrire, patire
spend (<i>time</i>) passare; (<i>money</i>) spēndere	suffice bastare
spirit spīrito <i>m.</i>	suitable addatto; <i>be</i> ~ convenire
spool rocchetto <i>m.</i>	sum somma <i>f.</i>
spoon cucchiaino <i>m.</i>	summer estate <i>f.</i>
spot macchia <i>f.</i>	summit colmo <i>m.</i>
spread distēdere	sun sole <i>m.</i>
spring (<i>season</i>) primavera <i>f.</i> ; (<i>motive</i> <i>power</i>) molla <i>f.</i>	Sunday domēnica <i>f.</i>
spy spia <i>f.</i>	superior superiore
stain macchia <i>f.</i>	support sostēgno <i>m.</i>
stair scala <i>f.</i> ; <i>winding</i> ~ scala <i>a</i> chiōcciola	supreme suprēmo
state stato <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> dichiarare	sure sicuro
statesman politico <i>m.</i>	surgeon chirurgo <i>m.</i>
	surprise sorpresa <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> sorprēndere
	swarm sciame <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> formicolare
	swear giurare
	sweet dolce
	sweetmeat dolce <i>m.</i> ; chicca <i>f.</i>

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

Swiss svizzero	they essi, esse
table tavola <i>f.</i> ; set the ~ apparecchiare; ~cloth tovaglia <i>f.</i>	thicket macchia <i>f.</i>
tailor sarto <i>m.</i>	thimble ditale <i>m.</i>
take prendere, pigliare; ~ off levarsi; ~ away togliere; ~ one's way avviarsi; ~ out cavare	thing cosa <i>f.</i>
talent ingegno <i>m.</i>	things roba <i>f. collective</i>
tall alto	think pensare; (<i>believe</i>) credere
task lavoro <i>m.</i>	third terzo
tax tassa <i>f.</i>	thirst sete <i>f.</i>
tea tè <i>m.</i>	thirsty : be ~ avere sete
teach insegnare	thirteen tredici
teacher maestro, -a; istitutore, -trice	thirteenth decimo terzo
telegram telegramma, dispaccio <i>m.</i>	thirty trenta
telephone telefonare	this questo
tell dire; raccontare	thither lì, là
ten dieci	Thomas Tommaso
tenth decimo	thou tu
terrible terribile	though benchè, sebbene
territory territorio <i>m.</i>	thought pensiero <i>m.</i>
tête à tête a quattr'occhi	thousand mille
Thames Tamigi <i>m.</i>	threat minaccia <i>f.</i>
than di, che, di quel che	threaten minacciare
thanks grazie <i>f. pl.</i>	three tre
that <i>dem. pron.</i> quello; <i>rel. pron.</i> che; <i>conj.</i> che	threshold soglia <i>f.</i>
thaw sgelare, dighiacciare	throw gettare, buttare; ~ away buttar via
the il, la; <i>pl.</i> i, gli, le	thunder tuono <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> tonare
theater teatro <i>m.</i>	thunderbolt fulmine <i>m.</i>
thee ti, te	Thursday giovedì <i>m.</i>
their il loro, la loro, <i>etc.</i>	thus così
them li, le, loro	thy il tuo, la tua, <i>etc.</i>
theme tema <i>m.</i>	thysself tu stesso; <i>refl.</i> ti
themselves loro stessi; <i>refl.</i> si	Tiber Tevere <i>m.</i>
then allora, dunque	ticket biglietto <i>m.</i> ; round-trip ~ biglietto d'andata e ritorno; first-class ~ biglietto di prima classe
thence indi, ne	ticket-window sportello <i>m.</i>
there lì, là; ~ is, ~ are, c'è, ci sono, (<i>dem.</i>) ecco	tight stretto
therefore dunque	time tempo <i>m.</i> ; (<i>a time</i>) volta <i>f.</i> ; on ~ a tempo; short ~ poco
	tin latta <i>f.</i>

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

tiny mīnimo, piccino	twentieth ventēŝimo
tired stanco; become ~ stancarsi	twenty venti
to a, ad	twice due volte
to-day oggi	two due
together insiēme	typewriter mächchina (<i>f.</i>) dascrivere
to-morrow domani	typical tipico
tongs mōlle <i>f. pl.</i>	tyranny tirannia <i>f.</i>
too, too much, troppo ; ~ many	tyrant tiranno <i>m.</i>
troppi	
tooth dēnte <i>m.</i>	ugly brutto
top cima <i>f.</i> ; on ~ of in cima a	umbrella ombrellō <i>m.</i>
torture supplizio <i>m.</i>	uncle zio <i>m.</i>
tour giro <i>m.</i>	under sotto
towards vērso	understand capire, intēdere
tower tōrre <i>f.</i>	unequal ineguale
trade mestiere; commērcio <i>m.</i>	uneven impari
train trēno <i>m.</i>	unhappy infelice
traitor , -ress, traditōre, -tōra	union unità <i>f.</i>
travel viaggiare	unite unire
traveler viaggiatōre <i>m.</i>	university università <i>f.</i>
treachery tradimēto <i>m.</i>	unless a mēno chē (<i>w. subj.</i>)
tree ālbero <i>m.</i>	until fino a
tremble tremare	up su; get ~ levarsì
tricolored tricolōre	upon su
trimming guarniziōne <i>f.</i>	upper superiore
triple triplice, triplo	us ci, noi
troops truppe <i>f. pl.</i>	use uso <i>m.</i> ; make ~ of servirsì di;
trousers calzōni <i>m. pl.</i>	be of ~ to servire a
trunk baūle <i>m.</i> ; pack one's ~ fare	usual sōlito; as ~ come al sōlito
il baūle	usually generalmēte, pēr il sōlito
truth verità <i>f.</i>	
try provare, cercare di; ~ one's	vacation vacanza <i>f.</i>
best fare di tutto; ~ on provare	vain : in ~ indarno
Tuesday martedì <i>m.</i>	valley valle <i>f.</i>
Turk Turco <i>m.</i>	value prēgio <i>m.</i> ; be of ~ valēre
turn voltarsi; ~ back rivoltare; in	vast vasto
~ a vicēnda; be the ~ of toccare a	veil vèlo <i>m.</i>
Tuscany la Toscana	Venetian veneziano
twelfth dēcimo sēcōdo	Venice Venēzia
twelve dōdici	very mōlto

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

view vista <i>f.</i>	west ponente <i>m.</i>
village villaggio, paese <i>m.</i>	western occidentale
vintage vendemmia <i>f.</i>	wet bagnato
violet mämmola <i>f.</i>	what che, quel che
virtue virtù <i>f.</i>	whatever <i>adj.</i> qualunque; <i>pron.</i>
visit visita <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> visitare	checcchè
	when quando
wager scommessa <i>f.</i>	whenever qualora (<i>w. subj.</i>)
wait, wait for, aspettare	where dove
waiter cameriere <i>m.</i>	wherever dovunque (<i>w. subj.</i>)
walk <i>v.</i> camminare, andare a piedi	whether se
walk passeggiata, giratina <i>f.</i> , spasso	which che, il quale
<i>m.</i> ; take a ~ andare a spasso,	while mentre; be worth ~ meritare
fare una passeggiata	il conto
wall muro <i>m.</i> (<i>pl.</i> le mura)	white bianco
walnut noce <i>f.</i>	who <i>rel.</i> che; <i>interr.</i> chi
wander peregrinare	whom <i>rel.</i> che, cui; <i>interr.</i> chi
war guerra <i>f.</i> ; wage ~ muover guerra	whose il cui, (di) cui; <i>interr.</i> di chi
warfare guerra <i>f.</i> ; of ~ bellico	why perchè
warlike bellicoso	wicked scellerato
warm caldo; be ~ aver caldo	wide largo
wash lavare; ~stand lavamano <i>m.</i>	width larghezza <i>f.</i>
watch orologio <i>m.</i> ; <i>v.</i> guardare,	wife moglie <i>f.</i>
vegliare	will volontà <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> volere
water acqua <i>f.</i> ; <i>v.</i> annaffiare	win vincere
wave onda <i>f.</i>	wind up caricare
way via, strada <i>f.</i> ; lose one's ~	wind vento <i>m.</i>
smarrirsi; take one's ~ avviarsi,	window finestra <i>f.</i>
recarsi; on the ~ strada facendo	winter inverno <i>m.</i>
we noi	wise savio, sapiente
weak debole, caduco, fiacco	wish volere, desiderare; ~ well
weather tempo <i>m.</i> ; it is fine ~ fa	augurare
bel tempo	with con
wedding nozze <i>f. pl.</i>	wither appassire
Wednesday mercoledì <i>m.</i>	without senza; do ~ fare a meno
week settimana <i>f.</i>	di
weep piangere	woman donna <i>f.</i> ; married ~ signora
welcome benvenuto; you're ~ niente	<i>f.</i> ; unmarried ~ signorina <i>f.</i>
well bene; ~ then ebbene, dunque;	wood bosco <i>m.</i> ; (<i>material</i>) legno <i>m.</i>
~ now o or o	wool lana <i>f.</i>

ENGLISH-ITALIAN VOCABULARY

work <i>opera f., lavoro m.; v. lavorare</i>	yard <i>corte f.</i>
workman <i>operaio m.</i>	yawn <i>sbadigliare</i>
world <i>mondo m.</i>	year <i>anno m.</i>
worse <i>adj. peggiore; adv. peggio</i>	yes <i>sì</i>
worst <i>il peggiore; il peggio</i>	yesterday <i>ieri</i>
worry <i>tr. dar pensiero a; intr. stare</i> <i>in pensiero, darsi pensiero</i>	yet <i>ancora, tuttavia</i>
worth <i>be ∞ valere</i>	you <i>voi, tu, Lei; cf. 65, a, b, c</i>
would <i>volere; past fut. or subj.</i>	young <i>giovane</i>
wound <i>ferita f.; v. ferire</i>	your <i>il vostro, il tuo, il Suo</i>
wound up <i>adj. carico</i>	yourself <i>voi stesso, tu stesso, Lei</i> <i>stesso; refl. vi, ti, si</i>
write <i>scrivere</i>	yourselves <i>voi stessi, Loro stessi;</i> <i>refl. vi, si</i>
writer <i>scrittore m.</i>	youth <i>gioventù f.</i>
wrong <i>be ∞ aver torto</i>	



INDEX

[Numbers refer to sections]

- a**, idioms with, 227, *a*
- Accent, graphic, 18-21
 - acute, 21
 - circumflex, 20
 - grave, 19
 - meaning distinguished by, 19, *e*
- Accent, tonic, 9-15
 - marks of, in this book, 9
 - meaning distinguished by, 15
 - in truncated words, 33
 - in verbs, 13, *a*
- Addition of *d* or *r* for euphony, 39
- Address, person in, 65, *a-d*; 100, *c*
- Adjectives, 82-88
 - agreement, 83
 - with two or more nouns, 83, *b*
 - sg. adj. with pl. n., 83, *c*
 - capitalization of, 88, *a*
 - demonstrative, 86; 190
 - interrogative, 87; 191
 - invariable, 85, *b*
 - irregular, 85, *a*
 - position of, 84
 - prepositions with, 223
 - used substantively, 88
 - with subst. understood, 88, *b*
- Adverbs, 89; 212-219
 - comparison of, 115; 116; 117
 - formation of, 89, *a*; 214
 - position of, 212; 216, *a*
 - of affirmation, 215; 230, *b*, 3
 - of manner, 214; 219, *a*; 227
 - of negation, 216
 - of place, 217; 219, *b*
 - of quantity, 89, *b*; 160; 218
 - of time, 219, *c*
- Age, 153
- 'ago,' 151, *d*
- alcuno, 206, *a*
- 'all,' 160, *c*
- Alphabet, 1
- altro, 206, *c*, *d*
- altrui, 206, *b*
- andare, 149
 - idioms with, 149, *b*
 - special uses of, 149, *a*
- 'any,' 77; 124; 206, *a*, 1, 2, 3; 206, *c*
- Apheresis, 35
- Apocope, 37
- Archaic forms, 44-49
- Arithmetical formulae, 159, *b*
- Article, *see* Definite *and* Indefinite
- Article repeated, 61
- Augmentatives, 228, *a*; 229
- Auxiliary
 - agreement of past part. with, 99; 104, *c*, 1, 2; 122; 194, *b*
 - avere used as, 68; 101, *b*, *c*; 121
 - 'do,' 62, *b*, 1; 215, *c*
 - essere used as, 98; 101, *a*, *c*
 - modal auxiliaries, 186
 - avere, 68; 101; 120; 121
 - idiomatic uses of, 123
 - past part. with, 122
- 'be,' 96
- bello, forms of, 85, *a*
- 'both,' 150, *d*; 207, *f*
- buono, forms of, 85, *a*
- 'can,' *see* Modal auxiliaries, *sapere*
- Capitalization, 41-43
 - capitals omitted, 42
 - capitals used contrary to English usage, 43
 - of adjectives, 88, *a*
- Cardinal numerals, 150
- 'about' with, 158, *a*, 1

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

- care**, verbs ending in, 110, *a*, *i*
- Century, number of, 151, *c*; 157, *c*
- cere**, verbs ending in, 110, *c*
- che**, 114, *a*; 115, *b*, *i*, 2, *c*; 169, *i*, note 2; 189, *b*; 230, *b*, 2, 3, 4
- ci** (adv.), 126; 217, *b*, *c*
- ci** (pron.), 94; 125, *b*, *i*; 224, *b*
- ciare**, verbs ending in, 110, *a*, 2
- ciò**, 190, *d*
- Close vowels, 3, *a*, *c*, *f*
- co**, masculines in, 178, *c*
- Collective nouns, agreement with, 183
- Collective numerals, 158, *a*
 - with special meanings, 158, *b*
- Comparatives, 115
 - of equality, 119
 - irregular, 117, *a*
 - with special meanings, 117, *b*
- Compound nouns, 181; 225
- Compound tenses, 68; 96; 120
- Conjugations, 90, *a*
- Conjunctions, 230
- Conjunctive pronoun objects
 - forms, 94
 - changes in, 125, *b*
 - position, 95, *a*, *b*
 - of two objects, 125, *a*
 - with dependent inf., 167
 - curtailment of inf. before, 95, *b*, 2
 - direct becoming indirect, 167, *c*, 2
 - initial consonants doubled in, 100, *b*
 - used redundantly, 100, *d*, *e*
 - used as subject, 100, *g*
 - with compound prep. and verb, 222, *a*
 - with **ecco**, 100, *a*
- Consonants, 5
- Contraction of prepositions, 75
- d**, addition of, for euphony, 39
- da**, idiomatic uses of, 103; 112; 123, *a*; 139; 162, *c*; 227, *b*
- dare**, 131
 - idioms with, 131, *a*
- Dates, 150, *c*; 151, *a*, *b*, *c*; 157, *c*
- Definite article
 - forms, 70
 - their uses, 71; 72
- syntax, 73; 146; 147
 - agreement with two nouns, 148
 - in dates, 146, *f*; 151
 - distributive, 146, *g*
 - idiomatic uses, 146, *k*
 - omission of, 147
 - used for possessive, 107, *c*; 146, *e*
 - with proper names, 146, *c*, *d*, *h*
- Demonstrative adjective, 86; 190
- Demonstrative pronoun, 190
- dì**, 78; 164, *b*, *i*; 174, *b*, 3, *c*, 3; 205, *a*; 221, *b*; 227, *c*
- Dialogues
 - In un albergo, p. 154
 - L' Arrivo, p. 134
 - L' Automobile, p. 219
 - Dal calzolaio, p. 202
 - Dalla modista, p. 245
 - Dalla sarta, p. 163
 - Dal sarto, p. 188
 - Si fanno le compre, p. 250
- Diminutives, 228, *b*; 229
- Diphthongs, 4, *a*, *b*; 53
- dire**, 175
- Disjunctive pronoun, 135; 136
 - nominative, 65; 135, *a*
 - objective, 135, *b*
 - uses of, 65, *a*, *i*; 136
- 'do,' auxiliary, 62, *b*, *i*; 215, *c*
- dolere**, 172
- Double consonants, 5, *b*
- Doublings, special, 5, *b*, 2
- dovere**, 188
 - special uses of, 187, *c*
- ecco**, 100, *a*; 217, *c*
- ed** for **e**, 39
- Elision, 22-28; 52
 - in contracted forms, 28
- essere**, 96
 - used as auxiliary, 98; 101, *a*, *c*
- Exclamations, 191, *a*; 230, *b*, 2; 231
- fare**, 163
 - idioms with, 163, *b*
 - with dependent inf., 163, *a*; 167, *c*
- Fractions, 157, *b*
- 'from,' 227, *d*, 2
- Future, 69; 141

INDEX

- gare**, verbs ending in, 110, *a*, 1
- Gender**, 80; 197-203
 - distinguished by form, 80, *b*; 197
 - distinguished by meaning, 80, *a*; 198
 - masculines in *a*, 202
 - in names of animals, 200
 - in nouns of human relationship, 201
 - rank, feminine forms of words denoting, 203
 - two genders, nouns of, 199
- Genitive**, *see* Possessive
- gere**, verbs ending in, 110, *c*
- Gerund**, English, transl. into Italian, 193, *d*
- Gerundive**, Italian, 193, *b*
- giare**, verbs ending in, 110, *a*, 2
- gli** (hard *g*), 5, *c*
- grande**, forms of, 85, *a*
- 'half,' 157, *b*, 1
- 'have,' 120
 - 'have to,' 123, *a*
- 'here,' 126, *a*; 217; 219, *b*
- 'he who,' 190, *c*, 2
- 'however,' 230, *a*
- i**, euphonic, 38
- iare**, verbs ending in, 110, *b*
- Idioms**, *see* *andare*, *da*, *dare*, etc., Adverbs, Prepositions, Time, Weather, etc.
- Imperative**
 - formation, in irr. verbs, 130, *e*
 - negative, 92, *b*
 - third person of, 92, *a*
- Impersonal English expressions**, translation of, 106, *b*
- Impersonal verbs**, 164
 - with subjunctive, 164, *b*
 - use of *di* with, 164, *b*, 1
- Indefinite article**
 - forms, 58
 - their uses, 59; 60
 - syntax of, 61; 66; 162
- Indefinite pronouns**, 205-210
 - alphabetical list, 205
 - with *di*, 205, *a*
 - negative, 210
- Indicative**, *see* Tenses
- Infinitive**, 173; 174
 - government of, 174
 - uses of, 173
 - with *a*, 174, *b*, 1; *c*, 2
 - with *da*, 174, *a*; *c*, 4
 - with *di*, 174, *b*, 3; *c*, 3
- Inflections**, *see* Conjugations
- Interjections**, 231
- Interrogative adjective**, 87; 191
- Interrogative construction**, 62
- Interrogative pronouns**, 191
- Invariable adjectives**, 85, *b*
- Invariable nouns**, 176
- Inversion**, 145; 194, *c*
- io**, plural of nouns in, 178, *a*, 2
- Irregular verbs**, pp. 261-273
 - formation, 130
 - past absolutes of, 120, *a*
 - principal parts of, 120, *b*; 130
 - regular forms of, 128
- issimo**, ending, 116, *d*
- 'it,' anticipative subject, 100, *g*, 2
- in predicate after *essere*, 100, *e*
- 'it is I,' etc., 65, *f*
- 'its,' 107, *c*
- Lei**, in address, 65, *a*, 1; 100, *c*
- Letters**, *see* Alphabet, Consonants, Vowels
- loro**, 125, *a*, 1; 136, *i*, 1
- mai**, 191, *b*; 216, *f*, 1
- 'may,' *see* Modal auxiliaries
- Marks of pronunciation**, 2, *a*; 5, *e*; 9
- Measurements**, 155
- meco**, etc., 136, *a*, 1
- Metathesis**, 40
- Modal auxiliaries**, 186; 187
 - in compound tenses, 186, *b*
 - with inf., 186, *d*
 - special uses of, 187
- Money**, 154
- Moods**, *see* Imperative, Indicative, Subjunctive
- morire**, 156
- Multiplicatives**, 159, *a*
- 'must,' *see* Modal auxiliaries
- 'myself,' etc., *see* Reflexives

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

- nascere**, past tenses of, 140, *d*, 1
ne (adv.), 126; 217, *b*
ne (pron.), 107, *c*; 124; 224, *b*
 for *ci*, 24, *a*, 1
 'never,' 216, *b*, 1; *f*
no for **non**, 216, *d*
non, 216, *a*, *b*, *f*
 pleonastic, 169, *a*, 1
 position, 216, *a*
 'not,' 216
Nouns, *see* Gender, Plural
 compound, 181; 225
 position as object of dependent
 infinitive, 187, *c*, 1
Number, *see* Plural
Numerals, *see* Cardinal, Ordinal
- o**, **uo**, in verbs, 110, *d*
Objects, *see* Conjunctive and Nouns
Old forms, *see* Archaic
 'one,' 106, *b*; 207
 'only,' 216, *b*
Open vowels, 3, *b*, *d*, *g*
Ordinal numerals, 157
 agreement, 157, *a*
 century numbers, 157, *c*
 fractions, 157, *b*
 'half,' 157, *b*, 1
 order, 157, *d*, *e*
 uses, 157, *b-d*
Orthographical peculiarities of
 verbs, 110
Orthography, *see* Variant forms
 'other,' 208, *d*
 'ought,' *see* Modal auxiliaries
- parere**, 161
Parole bisdruciole, 13
Parole piane, 10
Parole sdrucciole, 12
Parole tronche, 11
Participle, past, 194
 absolute construction, 195
 agreement, 194, *b*
 inversion, 194, *c*
Participle, present, 193
 English, transl. into Italian, 102;
 193, *c*
 Italian, transl. into English, 193,
 a, *b*
- Partitive**, 77; 124
Passive, 97
 English, transl. into Italian, 106, *a*
 with *andare*, *rimanere*, *venire*, 97,
 a, 1
Past absolute, 74; 140, *a*
 irregular construction of, 120, *a*
Past descriptive, 140, *c*
Past future, 79; 93; 142
Past tenses, *see* Tenses
Person in address, 65, *a-d*; 100, *c*
Personal pronouns, 65
 see Conjunctive, Disjunctive
piacere, 185
Pitch in speech, 14
Plural of nouns, 67; 176-184
 in compound nouns, 181
 defective, 182
 feminine, 177
 invariable, 176
 irregular, 179
 masculine, 178
 meaning distinguished by, 182, *d*
 in proper nouns, 180
 sg. used for, with parts of body,
 184
Poetic forms, *see* Archaic
porre, 196
Possessive with di, 78
Possessive adjective, 107
 agreement, 107, *b*
 definite article omitted, 108
 definite article used for, 109
 'its,' 107, *c*
potere, 168; 187, *b*
Prepositions, 221-227
 with adjectives, 223
 alphabetical lists of, 226
 compound, 223
 conjunctive object used with,
 222, *a*
 contracted with article, 75
 idioms with, 227
 with objects of verbs, 224, *b*
 repeated with each noun, 76
 simple, 221, *a*
 with pronouns, 221, *b*
Present indicative, *see* Tenses
Principal parts of verbs, 91; 120, *b*;
 130

INDEX

- Probability, future of, 141, *a*, 1
 Pronouns, *see* Conjunctive, Demonstrative, Disjunctive, Indefinite, Interrogative, Relative
 Pronoun subject omitted, 63, *a*
 Pronunciation, 2-5
 close vowels, 3, *a*, *c*, *f*
 consonant sounds, 5
 marks, 2, *a*; 5, *e*; 9
 meaning distinguished by, 3, *e*, *h*; 5, *b*, *e*, *d*; 15
 mispronunciations, 2, *b*
 open vowels, 3, *b*, *d*, *g*
 Tuscan peculiarities of, 5, *d*
 vowel sounds, 2
 words for practice, 16, 17

qualche, 206, *c*, 1

r, euphonic, 39
 Reciprocal verbs, 104, *b*
 Reflexive pronoun, 94, *c*
 as dative of reference, 105, *b*, 3
 omitted from dependent inf., 105, *b*, 2
 for possessive, 105, *c*
 Reflexive verbs, 104-106
 with 2d conjunctive object, 127
 with prepositions, to translate
 English transitives, 105, *b*, 1
 uses, 104, *b*; 105
 special uses, 106
 Regular verbs, 90
 construction of, 91
 Relative pronoun
 forms, 114
 uses, 189
 Rhyme, 55
rimanere, 129

s, pronunciation of, 5, *e*, 1, 2
s impure, 59, *a*, 1
santo, forms of, 85, *a*
sapere, 132
 special meanings of, 132, *a*
scegliere, 211
sè, 136, *i*
 Semivowels, 4
sentire, conjugation of, 111, *a*
 'shall,' *see* Future, *dovere*
 'should,' *see* Past future

si, *see* Reflexive
 Singular for plural with parts of body, 184
 'so' after verbs of thinking etc., 100, *e*, 1; 215, *b*, 1
 'some,' 'some one,' 77; 124; 206
 'some more,' 208, *d*, 2
 Spelling, *see* Variant forms
stare, 166
 idioms with, 166, *b*
 special meanings of, 166, *a*
 Subject, inversion of, 145
 Subjunctive
 in dependent clauses, 169
 in conditions, 93
 with *credere*, 137
 with impersonal verbs, 164, *b*
 after superlatives, 118
 after verbs of wishing, 113
 in independent clauses, 171
 future for, 169, *i*, note 1
 sequence of tenses with, 170
 Suffixes, *see* Augmentatives, Diminutives
 Superlative, 116
 absolute, 116, *d*
 article omitted, 116, *b*
 preposition used with, 116, *c*
 subjunctive with, 118
 Syllabification, 6-8
 Syllables, division of, at end of line, 8
 Syncope, 36

 Tenses of the indicative, 139-142
 compound, 68; 96; 120
 future, 69; 141
 past absolute, 74; 140, *a*
 past descriptive, 140, *c*
 past future, 79; 93; 142
 past perfect, 140, *d*
 present, 139
 present perfect, 140, *b*
 second past perfect, 140, *e*
 sequence of, 143
 'than,' 115, *b*, *c*, *d*
 'there,' 217
 Time
 of day, 152
 idioms of, 151, *e*; 152, *e*; 160, *d*;
 219, *c*

AN ITALIAN GRAMMAR

- 'to,' 227, *d*, *i*
 Triphthongs, 4, *c*; 53, *a*
 Truncation, 29-33
 conditions of, 30
 irregular, 32
 poetic, 31, *d*
 regular, 31, *a*, *b*, *c*
 titles truncated, 31, *c*
 Tuscan peculiarities of pronunciation, 5, *d*

 udire, 192
 uno, 59, *b*; 150, *a*; 207
 uscire, 204

 valere, 220
 Variant forms of words, 34-40
 venire, 138
 special uses of, 138, *a*
 Verbs, *see* Regular, Irregular, Tenses
 agreement of
 with subject, 144
 with collectives, 163
 inversion of subject, 145
 sequence of tenses, 143; 170

 Versification, 50-57
 blank verse, 56
 diphthongs, 53
 elision, 52
 lines, 51
 rhyme, 55
 strophes, 57
 syllables, 54
 vi (adv.), 126; 217, *b*, *c*
 vi (pron.), 94; 125, *b*, *i*
 volere, 133
 special meanings of, 133, *a*;
 187, *a*
 Vowels, 2

 Weather, expressions of, 165
 'what,' rendering of, 190, *a*, 5, *a*;
 191; 191, *a*
 'whatever,' 'whoever,' 200, *b*
 'will,' *see* Future
 'would,' *see* Past future

 'you,' 65, *a*, *b*, *c*, *d*; 100, *c*
 z, pronunciation of, 5, *a*, 3, 4

100

100

100

100

To avoid fine, this book should be returned on
or before the date last stamped below

ROM-9-40

JUN 1952
JUL 17 1989

Phelps, R.S.
An Italian grammar.

657662

DATE _____

NAME _____

DATA

NAME _____

1

65766

657662

